This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

THE

NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

PRESENTED BY

Hon. George L. Rives
30 Jan. 1914

MEMOIRS OF A LIFE,

CHIEFLY PASSED

IN

PENNSYLVANIA,

WITHIN

THE LAST SIXTY YEARS.

By Alexander Graydon.

EDINBURGH;

PRINTED FOR WILLIAM BLACKWOOD: AND

T. CADELL, STRAND, LONDON.

1822.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
65625
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
R 1914 L

HARRISBURGH:

PRINTED BY JOHN WYETH.

1811.

Reprinted by George Ramsay & Company,
Edinburgh, 1822.

TO

HIS EXCELLENCY

RICHARD RUSH, Esq.

AMBASSADOR EXTRAORDINARY AND MINISTER PLENIPOTENTIARY

&c. &c. &c.

FROM THE

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

Sir,

Allow me to inscribe to you the republication of a Work which reflects honour on the literature of your native country, and to express my obligations for your attention to my inquiries concerning the Author.

It is remarkable, that a production so rich in the various excellencies of style, description, and impartiality, should not have been known to the collectors of American books in this country, especially as it is, perhaps, the best personal narrative that has yet appeared relative to the history of that great conflict which terminated in establishing the independence of the United States. The candour with respect to public occurrences, which it displays; the views of manners in Pennsylvania prior to the memorable era of 1776*; and the incidental sketches of historical characters, with which it is en-*

riched, cannot fail to render this volume a valuable addition to the stock of general knowledge, and will probably obtain for the Author no mean place among those who have added permanent lustre to the English language.

I have the honour to remain,

With sentiments of obligation and respect,

Your very faithful, humble servant,

JOHN GALT.

Edinburgh, 12th December 1821.

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION, - - - - - Page 1

CHAPTER I.

The Author's Account of his Family, and early Education—American Teachers—School Anecdotes—Author's Character—Academy at Philadelphia—Master and Ushers—Mr Beveridge and his Latin Poems, - - - - 4

CHAPTER II.

Retrospective Events in the Author's History—Philadelphia—Foot-races—The Paxton Boys threaten the City—Anecdotes of two British Officers—Author's early Amusements—Sailing—Swimming—Skating—Correction of Abbé Raynal—British Coffeehouse—Anecdotes of its Visitors, - - 34

CHAPTER III.

The Author mixes in new Society—Is destined for the Law—Philadelphian Theatricals—Anecdote—Debating Society—Causes of Youthful Follies—Junius's Letters, - - 73

CHAPTER IV.

The Author removes to Yorktown—Boarding-House, and Character of the Inmates—General Society—Returns to Philadelphia, and pursues his Legal Studies—Fencing—Anecdote of a Madman—Causes of the War with Britain—State of Parties—Preparation for War, - - - - 99

CHAPTER V.

Assembly of Congress—Continental Battalions—Recruiting—The Author charged with a Commission to General Schuyler—Narrative of his Journey, - - - 125

CHAPTER VI.

The Author reluctantly leaves Philadelphia—Character of the Army at New York—Erection of Fort Washington and Fort Lee—Connecticut Light House—Arrival of the British Troops at Long Island—Action of 27th of August and subsequent Skirmishes—Retreat of Americans from Long Island, Page 144

CHAPTER VII.

Americans abandon New York, and take Post at Fort Washington—Character of American Officers—Promotions—The Post at Fort Washington threatened—Summoned by General Howe—The Americans attacked and retire—Account of the Engagement, - - - - - - 170

CHAPTER VIII.

The Author taken Prisoner—Conduct of British Officers and Soldiers—The Prisoners—Character of General Howe—Prisoners removed to New York, - - - - - 204

CHAPTER IX.

Pardon offered to the Americans upon return to their Allegiance—Letter of General Washington—Sufferings of Prisoners—General Lee taken—British Provost Marshal—Character of Colonel Allen—A partial Exchange of Prisoners—American Officers removed to Long Island, - - - - - 234

CHAPTER X.

Situation of the Officers at Long Island—Society and Manners—Hardships of Captivity—The Author's Mother unexpectedly arrives at New York—Narrative of her Excursion—Procures the Author's Liberty on Parole, - - - - 257

CHAPTER XI.

The Author leaves Long Island for New York and Elizabethtown—Arrives at Philadelphia—Meets the Object of an Early Attachment—Public Feelings, - - - - - 287

CHAPTER XII.

Philadelphia Threatened—General Washington marches to meet the Enemy—Battle at Brandywine—British take Possession of

Philadelphia—Subsequent Operations—Character of the Republican Chiefs—Society at Reading—Temper of the Times—The Author Married, - - - - Page 306

CHAPTER XIII.

American Affectation in Titles—Prisoners at Long Island—Supernumerary Officers—Character of General Lee—Military Anecdotes—The Author enrolled in the Militia—Quaker Principles—Character of Dr Franklin—Mrs Macaulay—Milton's Sentiments of Democracy—Party Spirit—The Author appointed Prothonotary of the County of Dauphin, - - 329

CHAPTER XIV.

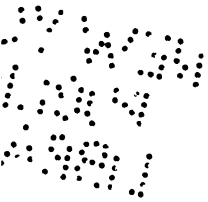
Constitution of the United States—House of Representatives—Senate—Executive Power—Public Characters and State of Parties—Washington—Jefferson—French Revolution, - 357

CHAPTER XV.

Yellow Fever—Political Differences—Insurrection suppressed by the prudent Measures of the President—Treaty with Great Britain—Travels of the Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt—French Settlement at the Asylum—Opposition to the Measures of the President—Washington retires from Office, - 383

CHAPTER XVI.

Mr Adams President—Opposition to his Administration—French Partisans—Imposition of Taxes—Insurrection—Federalists lose their Ground—Death of General Washington, and Election of Mr Jefferson—Character of that Gentleman—Reflections—Death of the Author's Mother—Conclusion - - 403



MEMOIRS OF A LIFE,

CHIEFLY PASSED IN PENNSYLVANIA.

INTRODUCTION.

The dealers in self-biography, ever sedulous to ward off the imputation of egotism, seldom fail to find apologies for their undertakings. Some, indeed, endeavour to persuade themselves, that they design their labours merely for their scrutoires; while others, less self-deceived, admit they have an eye to the public. The Cardinal De Retz is brought out at the request of a lady; Rousseau, by the desire of showing himself to a misjudging world, in all the verity of nature; Marmontel writes his life for his children at the instance of their mother; and Cumberland, so far as his motives can be collected from his introduction, because he lived and was an author. If, from these, we recur to the account given of himself by our own Franklin, we shall find, that, although addressed to his son, it is intended for the world; and that the acknowledged motives to it are a combination of family curiosity and personal vanity, with the desire of showing the connection between thrifty youth and re-

spectable age,—a kind of practical comment on the useful truths contained in Poor Richard's Almanac.

Next to the good fortune of having figured in some brilliant, active career; of having been the companion of a hero, or the depositary of state secrets; of having seen cities and men; of having wandered "through antres vast, and deserts idle," or been the subject of "moving accidents by flood and field;" the avowed inducement of Mr Cumberland is perhaps the most plausible.

Unfortunately for the person who here presumes to appear before the public, he is without one of these claims to attention. He has no pretensions to fame or distinction in any kind, neither as soldier, nor statesman, nor traveller, nor author. He is not wholly without hope, however, that his presumption may be palliated, and that, in his object of giving a representation of the character, spirit, and more minute occurrences of his time, it will be perceived, that there is no form into which his work can be thrown with so much advantage, as into that of personal memoirs. By his own story, if he is not misled by self-love, a kind of menstruum is afforded for the incongruous mass of his materials, serving to harmonize, in some degree, the abrupt transitions and detached details which a delineation of the various incidents of "many coloured life" requires.

As to himself, he is fully conscious that

> it matters not
> To whom related, or by whom begot;

and, therefore, he would fain buttress his undertaking by the opinion of an eminent poet, as vouched by Mr Walpole, viz. "That if any man were to form a book of what he had seen or heard himself, it must, in whatever hands,

prove a most useful and entertaining one." A most seducing ignis fatuus truly, considering the latitude with which it is laid down!

But, far from wishing to foreclose the reader by an opinion which he must own he considers a very questionable one, or to lure him on to an expectation of what he might vainly seek to find, he announces at his outset, that the pages here set before him hold out no other inducement to his perusal than such as may arise from the fidelity with which he will relate incidents within the scope of ordinary life, and depict some occurrences which came under his notice during the progress of the revolution, and since its consummation. In doing this, he will have occasion to speak as well of others as himself. He may sometimes resort to motives in accounting for men's actions; and, as these receive their qualities from the mind of the agent, he will, with equal freedom and truth, disclose the complexion of his own, having little, he thinks no inclination that it should pass for better than it is. If the mould in which it has been formed is not the most perfect, so neither, does he trust, is it absolutely the most worthless: if not calculated to produce a cast to the taste of worldly wisdom, one that may advance experimentally the sound philosophy of thrift, and practically mark the routes to private wealth and public greatness, it will yet be found abundantly fruitful in negative instruction on both points.

CHAPTER I.

The Author's Account of his Family, and early Education—American Teachers—School Anecdotes—Author's Character—Academy at Philadelphia—Master and Ushers—Mr Beveridge and his Latin Poems.

My recollections of the village of Bristol, in which I was born on the 10th of April, N. S. in the year 1752, cannot be supposed to go farther back than to the year 1756 or 1757. There are few towns, perhaps, in Pennsylvania, which, in the same space of time, have been so little improved, or undergone less alteration. Then, as now, the great road leading from Philadelphia to New York, first skirting the inlet, at the head of which stand the mills, and then turning short to the left along the banks of the Delaware, formed the principal, and, indeed, only street, marked by any thing like a continuity of building. A few places for streets were opened from this main one, on which, here and there, stood an humble, solitary dwelling. At a corner of two of these lanes was a Quaker meeting-house; and on a still more retired spot stood a small Episcopal church, whose lonely grave yard, with its surrounding woody scenery, might have furnished an appropriate theme for such a muse as Gray's. These, together with an old brick jail, (Bristol having once been the county town of Bucks,) constituted all the public edifices in this my native town. Its scite, though flat, is not unpleasant, particularly along the bank of the Dela-

ware, rising to a commanding height from a fair and gravelly margin. From hence the eye might rove at large both up and down the river, and, after traversing a fine expanse of water in an oblique direction, find an agreeable resting-place in the town of Burlington on the opposite shore.

As in this country there is little temptation to the tracing of a long line of ancestry, I shall content myself with deducing a very brief genealogy. And this not so much, perhaps, from an acquiescence in the revolutionary idea of the insignificance of an illustrious pedigree, as from real inability to produce one. I can go no farther, at least, than to vouch that we had a coat of arms in the family, borne about on the body of an old fashioned chaise, and engraved upon our spoons and a double-handled caudle-cup. But if, instead of groping amidst the darkness of transatlantic heraldry, we confine ourselves to our own shores, which seems much the most congenial to the noble spirit of independence we are pleased to manifest on other occasions, I am warranted in asserting, that I am descended from ancestors, respectable both as to station and character; from a stock not ignoble, but honest and generous: And if parental propensities are transmitted to offspring in the human race, but in half the degree that they are among quadrupeds, the value we may be disposed to set on virtuous progenitors is very far from chimerical. Several years' residence on a farm has afforded me opportunity for some observations upon the nature of domestic animals; and I have found, what I should have been disposed to laugh at, had I not proved it, that, among the ox kind especially, the vices, which seemed mere habits of the female parent, have invariably descended to her offspring.

I venture this remark, though not quite in unison with the tone of the subject; and though liable to be strained into an assumption of worth on my part, to which I may, in fact, be wholly destitute of pretension.

My father was an Irishman, and, as it appears from some imperfect documents in my possession, came to this country in the year 1730. He was born, I think, in Longford, and was brought up under the care of his maternal grandfather in Dublin, or its neighbourhood. Being designed for the pulpit, he had received a suitable education, to which having added many of the accomplishments at that time in fashion, he was distinguished in Philadelphia both as a scholar and a gentleman. It was not long since, that the late Chief Justice Shippen informed me, he was the person always appealed to, in the coffeehouse controversies of the young men of the day, on points of science and literature. During his presidency of the county courts of Bucks, he had made himself, as I have understood, a very tolerable lawyer, insomuch that, at the time of his death, he was, as I have been informed, in nomination for the office of a judge of the supreme court of Pennsylvania. From the copies of letters to his friends in Ireland, soon after his arrival in Philadelphia, he appears not to have taken up very favourable sentiments of its inhabitants. "Most of our trading people here," says he, "are complaisant sharpers; and that maxim in trade, to think every man a knave, until the contrary evidently appears, would do well to be observed here if any where. In this province we have a toleration for all religions, which some have enlarged so far, as to make a neglect and indifference of all religion, their only religion." These being the opinions of a young man but of about two and twenty years of age, it

is not improbable that they were too hastily formed; but if, unfortunately for the honour of our infant metropolis, they were correct, it is some relief to hear, that mercantile integrity, joined to genuine and unaffected hospitality, was also to be found there, as appears from the following extract of a letter, dated the 18th of March 1731. "Soon after we arrived here, it happened, and I hope providentially for us, (himself and his father-in-law, Mr Emerson, who made one family,) that we rented a house from one Mr Peter Baynton, adjacent to his own, who is a considerable merchant in this city. As he is a man of singular sobriety, and not well affected to the reigning humour in this town, he has admitted us into his chief confidence, and distinguished us as his principal friends and associates, in so much that he will enter upon no project or design in trade, without admitting us to a share in it: and, from the success of some we have already undertaken, we have not the least room to doubt of his sincerity and kindness." Such is my father's sketch of Philadelphia manners eighty years ago. From the same letter it appears, that, at the instance of this Mr Baynton, he had contemplated with him a partnership in trade, to be carried on in the town of Burlington, which, he observes, "though it be now somewhat obscure, it has yet many advantages capable of improvement."

This contemplated removal, however, did not take place. He continued in business in Philadelphia, and in the war, probably, with Spain, which broke out in the year 1741, was concerned with several of the principal merchants in that city in building and fitting out the Tartar privateer. This vessel, supposed to be

the finest, as she was the largest, that had at that time been built on the Delaware, had a singular fate. On her passage to the sea, at a fine season of the year, she was lost in the bay. To make the most of a gentle breeze that was blowing, she was under full sail, when, either from a deficiency of ballast, a disproportion in her rigging, or some other fault in her construction, she was almost instantaneously overturned by a flaw from the shore. The greater part of the owners, who had formed a party to see her out of the capes, were on board, and among them my father. So mild was the day, and so little cause was there for apprehension, that he was amusing himself on deck with one of Moliere's plays, when the disaster occurred. Finding himself precipitated among the waves, he immediately seized on a chest that had floated from the vessel, and placing himself on the middle of it, its extremities served to support a sailor on each side of him. In this situation, they were driven at the mercy of the waves for a considerable time, without any prospect of relief. They were sometimes about to quit their hold, and at once resign themselves to a fate which appeared inevitable. This was peculiarly the case with one of the sailors, whom my father exerted himself to the utmost to encourage, since, if he had abandoned the chest, it would have lost its equilibrium, and in the weak, exhausted state in which they were, they must all have perished. At length, a vessel hove in sight, and appeared to be making towards them: It proved to be so, and they were taken up while yet enough of vital power remained, to render the means used for their restoration efficacious. The captain, if I am not mistaken, and the greater part of the Tartar's crew, were drowned, as were most of the owners that

were on board. Although I have heard my father relate the circumstances of this misfortune, and have since heard it spoken of in the family, my recollection of the particulars is very imperfect.

My mother, the second wife of my father, was the eldest of four daughters; she was born in the island of Barbadoes, and when about seven years of age, was brought to Philadelphia by her parents, who then came to reside in that city. Her father was a German, born, if I mistake not, in Frankfort on the Maine. He had been engaged in trade while in Barbadoes, and brought with him into Pennsylvania a pretty good property. Her mother was from Scotland, having first drawn breath in the city of Glasgow; but by what means a pair of so little national affinity as these my grand parents on the mother's side were brought together, I never learned. From their conversation, however, I remember they had resided sometime in London previously to their settling in Barbadoes. Notwithstanding the apparent want of associating principles in some respects, they yet agreed very well. While the tongue of my grandfather faithfully retained the character of its original dialect, that of his spouse, though in a less degree, bore testimony also to the country of her extraction; and while he, a determined Episcopalian, had his pew in Christ's Church, she, a strict Presbyterian, was a constant attendant at Buttonwood meeting-house. No feuds, however, were engendered by this want of religious conformity; and if my grandfather sometimes consented to hear a sermon at the meeting-house, it might be considered as a concession on his part for a sermon of Archbishop Tillotson, which was regularly read aloud by one of the family on Sunday evening. Though a loud

talker, and somewhat rough and boisterous in his manner, the old gentleman was at bottom highly liberal, benevolent, and good natured. The good lady, on the other hand, was rather austere; and the management of her family strongly tinctured with the primitive discipline of her church. Her countenance on Sunday always assumed an unusual degree of severity, and while under her tutorage, I might truly say, in the meaning of the poet, it shone no Sabbath day to me. Then, instead of rest, my labours were augmented; then chapters were to be read, and long catechisms to be conned or repeated. The best things may be overdone, and the imposition of hard and unreasonable tasks is more apt to create disgust, than conciliation to instruction. So at least it was with me. I deemed my tutoress unfeeling and tyrannical, while, by her, I was considered as reprobate and incorrigible.

Although my progenitors, on neither side, appear to have possessed the talent of amassing wealth, there is a circumstance common to both, which seems unequivocally to indicate liberality and sincerity of heart. And yet it is a circumstance which, probably, would have escaped me, had it not been noticed by my uncle, by marriage, the late Judge Biddle. Your family, said he one day to me, has had an honour which has happened to few, that of inducing two persons, wholly unconnected with you, to attach themselves to you; to make your interests their own; and, without contract or pecuniary tie, to remain with you till their deaths. One of these was a Scotchman, of the name of Thomas Gordon, who came into my grandfather's service in Philadelphia, in the capacity of a clerk, continued with him after he had declined business, and remained among

us long after his death, until the time of his own decease, which happened at Reading, in the year 1777. He was born in Aberdeen, and had been bred to business in a counting-house at Rotterdam. He never was married. In his latter days he became a perfect clock in regularity; was a truly honest man, and, what will be thought still better by many, he was a genuine Whig of *seventy-six*, though too old or infirm to carry arms in the revolutionary contest. The other was a maiden lady of the society of Friends, who, upon occasion of my mother being in want of a female domestic, offered to assist her for a short time, came into the family soon after I was born, and never left it until taken from us by death, at an advanced age, in the year 1794. Her name was Ann Burgess; she was a woman of good understanding, and reputably connected.

With the exception of the family of Dr Denormandie, our own, and perhaps one or two more, the principal inhabitants of Bristol were Quakers. Among these the names of Buckley, Williams, Large, Meritt, Hutchinson, and Church, are familiar to me. The last, bred to the trade of a cooper, but who had put his son in the business, and employed himself more in the management of a small farm and nursery of fruit trees, was a sincere and steady friend to our family. He was married to the sister of Ann Burgess, just mentioned, and was a very worthy man, possessing a good natural understanding, with a strong addiction to philosophical speculations. His attachment to my father went beyond friendship: it reached to admiration and veneration. He thought him, as he has often told me, one of the best and wisest men that ever lived. I never knew him do a foolish thing, said he, but once. Upon my asking

him what that was; it was, said he, on occasion of some worthless fellow reporting that he had seen one or more Indians in the swamp beyond the church, assembling a body of the militia, of which he was colonel, and marching out with drums beating and colours flying, against the supposed enemy. But this instance is equivocal. Whether my father gave credit to the report or not, others might, and no doubt did believe it. It was also incumbent on him to be alert; to inculcate that duty upon his men, and to inure them to alarms; and although more silence, and less parade, might have been more truly military, yet something of the "pride, pomp, and circumstance of glorious war," is allowable to militia, particularly to a body which had certainly never encountered an enemy. Besides, to the calm incredulity of friend Church upon this occasion, we might perhaps safely add, a little both of the spirit of party and of quakerism. The people of his society, from principle averse to war, were charged with being too friendly to the Indians; with being too ready to palliate their enormities, and, consequently, indisposed to listen to the alarming accounts which the panic, produced by Braddock's defeat, had spread throughout the country. By this event every obstacle to their incursions being removed, in the minds of the timid they were to be looked for every where. From the consternation that prevailed, I can still recollect, that the horrors of a discomfiture by such a foe, were among my most early and lively impressions. To the terrors of the tomahawk and the scalping-knife, the imagination adds the savage yells, the gloomy woods, and dismal swamps, which are their usual accompaniments; and, hence, minds that have been deeply impressed by the fatal fields of Brad-

dock and St Clair, are well prepared for the sombre interest imparted by Tacitus's affecting description of that of Varus, visited after an interval of six years, by Germanicus :—*Occulta saltuum, maestos locos, visuque ac memoria deformes. Medio campi albentia ossa, ut fugerunt, ut restiterunt dissecta vel aggerata.* "Those deep and dreary recesses, hideous both to sight and memory; with the whitening bones, scattered or heaped together, as either they belonged to those who fell in flight, or met their fate resisting."

There being no traces in my memory of any incidents worthy of remark, during the period of my infancy, I pass on to the era of my removal to Philadelphia, for the sake of my education. This I suppose to have been between my sixth and seventh year. I recollect little or nothing of going to school at Bristol, farther than that there was one, and the master's name Pinkerton, a kind, good humoured Irishman, from whom I might have learned, that as one thing was *cruel* big, so another might be *cruel* little. In the city I lived with, and was under the care of, my grandfather. The school he first put me to was that of David James Dove, an Englishman, and much celebrated in his day, as a teacher, and no less as a dealer in the minor kind of satirical poetry. To him were attributed some political effusions in this way, which were thought highly of by his party, and made a good deal of noise. He had also made some figure, it seems, in the old world, being spoken of, as I have heard, though in what way I know not, having never seen the work, in a book, entitled, The Life and Adventures of the Chevalier Taylor.* As the story went,

* This was Taylor the oculist, spoken of in Boswell's Life of

some one reading this performance to Mr Dove on its first appearance, with the mischievous design of amusing himself at his expence, as he knew what the book contained, he (Dove) bore testimony to the truth of the contents, with which, he said, he was perfectly acquainted, exclaiming, as the reader went along, True, true as the gospel! But when the part was reached, in which he himself is introduced in a situation somewhat ridiculous, he cried out, It was a lie, a most abominable lie, and that there was not a syllable of truth in the story. At any rate, Dove was a humorist, and a person not unlikely to be engaged in ludicrous scenes. It was his practice in his school to substitute disgrace for corporal punishment. His birch was rarely used in canonical method, but was generally stuck into the back part of the collar of the unfortunate culprit, who, with this badge of disgrace towering from his nape like a broom at the mast-head of a vessel for sale, was compelled to take his stand upon the top of the form for such a period of time as his offence was thought to deserve. He had another contrivance for boys who were late in their morning attendance. This was to dispatch a committee of five or six scholars for them, with a bell and lighted lantern, and in this "odd equipage," in broad day-light, the bell all the while tingling, were they escorted through the streets to school. As Dove affected a strict regard to justice in his dispensations of punishment, and always professed a wil-

---

Johnson, and who, though sprightly, was, according to the Doctor, an instance how far impudence could carry ignorance. He challenged me once to talk Latin with him, says the Doctor. I quoted some of Horace, which he took to be my own speech. He said a few words well enough.

lingness to have an equal measure of it meted out to himself, in case of his transgressing, the boys took him at his word; and one morning, when he had overstaid his time, either through laziness, inattention, or design, he found himself waited on in the usual form. He immediately admitted the justice of the procedure, and putting himself behind the lantern and bell, marched with great solemnity to school, to the no small gratification of the boys, and entertainment of the spectators. But this incident took place before I became a scholar. It was once my lot to be attended in this manner, but what had been sport to my tutor, was to me a serious punishment.

The school was, at this time, kept in Videll's Alley, which opened into Second, a little below Chesnut Street. It counted a number of scholars of both sexes, though chiefly boys; and the assistant, or writing-master, was John Reily, a very expert penman and conveyancer, a man of some note, who, in his gayer moods, affected a pompous and technical phraseology, as he is characterised under the name of Parchment, in a farce written some forty years ago, and which, having at least the merit of novelty and personality, was a very popular drama, though never brought upon the stage. Some years afterwards, Dove removed to Germantown, where he erected a large stone building, in the view of establishing an academy upon a large scale; but I believe his success was not answerable to his expectations. I know not what my progress was under the auspices of Mr Dove; but having never, in my early years, been smitten with the love of learning, I have reason to conclude it did not pass mediocrity. I recollect a circumstance, however, which one afternoon took place at my grandfather's, to

the no small entertainment of the old gentlemen, who often adverted to it afterwards. Dove was there, and in endeavouring to correct my utterance, as I had an ill habit of speaking with my teeth closed, as if indifferent whether I spoke or not, he bawled out, in one of his highest tones, "Why don't you speak louder? open your mouth like a Dutchman—say *yaw*."

Being now, probably, about eight years of age, it was deemed expedient to enter me at the academy, then, as it now continues to be, under the name of a university, the principal seminary in Pennsylvania; and I was accordingly introduced by my father to Mr Kinnersley, the teacher of English and professor of oratory. He was an Anabaptist clergyman, a large venerable looking man, of no great general erudition, though a considerable proficient in electricity; and who, whether truly or not, has been said to have had a share in certain discoveries in that science, of which Dr Franklin received the whole credit. The task of the younger boys, at least, consisted in learning to read and to write their mother tongue grammatically; and one day in the week (I think Friday) was set apart for the recitation of select passages in poetry and prose. For this purpose, each scholar, in his turn, ascended the stage, and said his speech, as the phrase was. This speech was carefully taught him by his master, both with respect to its pronunciation, and the action deemed suitable to its several parts. Two of these specimens of infantile oratory, to the disturbance of my repose, I had been qualified to exhibit: Family partiality, no doubt, overrated their merit; and hence, my declaiming powers were in a state of such constant requisition, that my orations, like worn-out ditties, became vapid and fatiguing to me, and, consequently, impaired my

relish for that kind of acquirement. More profit attended my reading. After Æsop's Fables, and an abridgment of the Roman History, Telemachus was put into our hands; and if it be admitted that the human heart may be bettered by instruction, mine, I may aver was benefited by this work of the virtuous Fenelon. While the mild wisdom of Mentor called forth my veneration, the noble ardour of the youthful hero excited my sympathy and emulation. I took part, like a second friend, in the vicissitudes of his fortune,—I participated in his toils,—I warmed with his exploits,—I wept where he wept, and exulted where he triumphed.

As my lot has been cast in a turbulent period, in a season of civil war and revolution, succeeded by scenes of domestic discord and fury, in all of which I have been compelled to take a part, I deem it of consequence to myself to bespeak toleration for the detail of a school-boy incident, that may in some degree serve to develope my character. It may equally tend to throw some light on the little world upon whose stage I had now entered. A few days after I had been put under the care of Mr Kinnersley, I was told by my class-mates that it was necessary for me to fight a battle with some one, in order to establish my claim to the honour of being an academy boy; that this could not be dispensed with, and that they would select for me a suitable antagonist, *one of my match,* whom after school I must fight, or be looked upon as a coward. I must confess that I did not at all relish the proposal. Though possessing a sufficient degree of spirit, or at least irascibility, to defend myself when assaulted, I had never been a boxer. Being of a light and slender make, I was not calculated for the business, nor had I ever been ambitious of being the cock

of a school. Besides, by the laws of the institution I was now a subject of, fighting was a capital crime; a sort of felony deprived of clergy, whose punishment was not to be averted by the most scholar-like reading. For these reasons, both of which had sufficient weight with me, and the last not the least, as I had never been a wilful transgressor of rules, or callous to the consequences of an infraction of them, I absolutely declined the proposal; although I had too much of that feeling about me which some might call false honour, to represent the case to the master, which would at once have extricated me from my difficulty, and brought down condign punishment on its imposers. Matters thus went on until school was out, when I found that the lists were appointed, and that a certain John Appowen, a lad who, though not quite so tall, yet better set and older than myself, was pitted against me. With increased pertinacity I again refused the combat, and insisted on being permitted to go home unmolested. On quickening my pace for this purpose, my persecutors, with Appowen at their head, followed close at my heels. Upon this I moved faster and faster, until my retreat became a flight too unequivocal and inglorious for a man to relate of himself, had not Homer furnished some apology for the procedure, in making the heroic Hector thrice encircle the walls of Troy, before he could find courage to encounter the implacable Achilles. To cut the story short, my spirit could no longer brook an oppression so intolerable, and, stung to the quick at the term coward which was lavished upon me, I made a halt and faced my pursuers. A combat immediately ensued between Appowen and myself, which for some time was maintained on each side with equal vigour and

determination, when unluckily I received his fist directly in my gullet. The blow for a time depriving me of breath and the power of resistance, victory declared for my adversary, though not without the acknowledgment of the party, that I had at last behaved well, and shown myself not unworthy of the name of an academy boy. Being thus established, I had no more battles imposed upon me, and none that I can recollect of my own provoking; for I have a right to declare, that my general department was correct and unoffending, though extremely obstinate and unyielding under a sense of injustice. I gave an early instance of this, in once burning the rod with which my father had corrected me, and upon his finding it out, and correcting me a second time, I declared I would drown myself, and ran towards a creek in a meadow not far off, with such an appearance of determination to execute the threat, that he thought proper to dispatch a servant after me in haste, and upon my being brought back, rather to yield to the violence of my temper, than persist in the attempt to subdue it.

In saying my resistance proceeded from a sense of injustice, I would by no means have it understood that my father had been culpable. I rather suppose, that a too ardent idea of the rights of a child had led me to consider that conduct oppressive, which was merely the effect of a paternal concern for my welfare.

While upon the topic of those early adventures, by which we are initiated into the ways of the world, I may mention a circumstance of another nature, which happened not very long after my arrival in the city. One evening about dusk, I was amusing myself on the pavement before the door, with some marbles; for having never been very strongly incited by a spirit of gamb-

ling, I frequently played alone, and even when I had a companion, I generally preferred playing *in fun*, to speak technically, to playing *in earnest*. A little, skulking rogue, with whom I had no kind of acquaintance, came up to me, and as he joined me in play with some marbles of his own, he took occasion to observe, that his were too small for him, but as mine, on the contrary, were large and exactly suited to his hand, he proposed an exchange, offering me the odds, first, of two, and then of three for one. Having no disposition to traffic with him, being pleased with my own, and satisfied with their number, I at first objected to his proposal, but he pressed me in so earnest a manner to accommodate him with but a part of mine, that, after some hesitation, I consented. Without giving me time for a resumption of my first determination, he picked up six or eight of my marbles, and throwing me down three or four times the number of his own, the amount of boot being apparently wholly unworthy of calculation, he decamped in a twinkling. Upon gathering up the commodities I had received in such abundance, I found them rather light; and on closer inspection, discovered, that, as they had been but clay in the hands of the potter, so I had been an equally ductile material in the hands of a swindler. These things are but puerilities, and very trifles, it is true, but can it be said that they are irrelative to the objects I set out with? And are they not prototypes of the transactions which the more important scene of man every day exhibits? If swindling and oppression beset us in infancy, does experience warrant us in affirming that the state of manhood is exempt from them?

Might I here be pardoned a brief recognition of the

qualities my childhood had unfolded, I might say, that, with a sufficient share of obstinacy and impatience of control, I had never manifested a propensity to mischief; and though I might sometimes have been a follower, I had never promoted or been a leader in those pranks which are denominated *unlucky*: Thank Heaven, I had never been guilty of a trick, and rarely, if ever, of a lie. I had no cunning, and, consequently, gave no token of those talents which might qualify me, one day, to rise in a commonwealth. On a scrutiny, therefore, of my character, the possibility might have been inferred, that, in an evil hour, and at a riper age, my passions might have hurried me into acts of fatal rashness, as, under better stars, they might have impelled me into the path of a Hampden; but that, in no situation, I could have trod the track of a Gracchus or a Drusus.

> The Gracchi fond of mischief-making laws,
> And Drusi popular in faction's cause.

Neither could the unshrinking determination which must enter into the composition of a Brutus have justly been imputed to me; not even on the specious ground of public good; my stuff was not so stern.

My amusements, as I have already said, depended much upon myself. I had a passion for drawing; and my early essays were considered as indications of much genius for the art. I was in the practice also of cutting men and horses out of cards. By separating the legs of the bipeds, I mounted them without difficulty; and by a similar process on those of the quadrupeds, I could give them a firm stand on a table. By these means I could either send them a hunting with a pack of hounds,

in like manner set upon their feet, or attach unmounted horses to sleighs, or wheel carriages, (all of which I manufactured,) at pleasure. My talent also gave me the command of regiments of cavalry, and my evenings, when there was no company, were generally employed in arranging them in order of battle. Divided into two bodies, they were disposed in hostile array, while round pieces of card, representing cannon balls, were the missiles alternately thrown at the different corps; that side being held to be defeated which was first battered down. It was truly a war of extermination, as the vanquished were always cut off to a man. Both my grandfather and grandmother, as well as my aunts, were pleased with my exhibitions; and it became a matter of doubt in the family, whether my genius most inclined me to the profession of a limner or a general.

Music, too, was an art for which I had discovered a propensity, and had already the enthusiasm of an *amateur*. From the drums and fifes of Otway's regiment, which every morning passed our door, I had, among other tunes, learnt the Grenadier's March; and I remember one day being on a visit to my father, who then resided in the country, at a place of Dr Denormandie's, as I was whistling it with great devotion, and marching to it in proper time, he was delighted with the truth of my ear, and the correctness of my performance: For he was much of a musical man, and played upon the violin, though, as I have been informed by one of his old friends, with more of science than execution.

Another circumstance, of some affinity to the topic, I cannot withhold, since it is an evidence of my coincidence in taste with the celebrated Mr Addison. I have somewhere seen it mentioned, that he was a warm ad-

mirer of the ballad of *Sally of the Alley*. I once, when very young, heard my mother sing it over a cradle, and was so enraptured with its simple pathos, that I was continually importuning her to repeat it. Whether it was the composition or the melody which had charmed me, I know not, but to my infant heart it appeared inimitably tender and affecting. The only verse I recollect of it is the following:—

Of all the days within the week,
I dearly love but one day,
And that's the day that comes between
Saturday and Monday:
For then I'm drest
All in my best,
To walk abroad with Sally;
She is the darling of my heart,
And lives in our alley.

Though an old ballad, it is possible that it may be yet so well known as to render this recital unnecessary, if not to give it an appearance of triteness. At any rate, I should hardly have ventured to notice it had it not been dignified by the approbation of a respectable name.

It was sometime before my entering into the Latin school that I had the misfortune to lose my father. This was in March 1761. He had just finished a country house on a favourite spot, sufficiently elevated to overlook the adjacent district for some miles round, and to command a view of the town of Bristol, distant not quite a mile, as well as that of Burlington, together with an extensive intervening tract of meadow ground, stretching to the shore of the Delaware, whose bright expanse was also subjected to the eye. He had long been improving the site before he began to build; had

planted it with the best fruits in every kind, and given to it the style of embellishment, both with respect to the disposition of the grounds and the trees, which was at that time in fashion. But this residence, at once so cherished and delightful, he was permitted to enjoy not quite a year. The blow was desolating to my mother, "whose heart was apt to feel;" and who, in addition to the calamity of being bereaved of one with whom her union had been happiness uninterrupted, found herself, at about the age of two and thirty, solely involved in the cares of a young family of four children, of whom I, about to complete my ninth year, was the eldest. To me, who was at home when the event took place, it was rather a shock than a matter of poignant grief. It was the first death that had been brought home to me; and the deep distress of the family, together with the dismal apparatus of coffins and hearses, could not fail to overwhelm me in the general gloom. The next day I was sent to Philadelphia, whither the remains of my father, attended by his faithful and dejected friend Joseph Church, were conveyed for interment. As funeral honours upon these occasions are the only solace of the afflicted, they were here bestowed with an unsparing hand. Much pomp was shown, and much expence incurred, both of which would have been saved had the will of the deceased, which enjoined a plain and economical burial, been previously opened. The pall, sustained by six of his old city friends, I followed as chief mourner, and saw the body deposited in the grave yard of Market Street Meeting-House, in or near the tomb wherein his first wife had been laid. My father, as already mentioned, came to this country a married man, and was about twenty years older than my mother. Though

he did possessed of a large and valuable landed property in the neighbourhood of Bristol, consisting of an equal part of one thousand acres, purchased, in conjunction with Mr M'Ilvaine, in the year 1752, of William Whitaker of London, it was encumbered; and the provision, made necessary by a settlement on his first marriage, for two children, who were the issue of it, rendered the residue inadequate to the support of his widow and her children. Hence, a removal of the family to Philadelphia became expedient, and was resolved on as soon as the requisite arrangements could be made; and it accordingly took place in the course of the year.

I have said that I was about to enter the Latin school. The person whose pupil I was consequently to become was Mr John Beveridge, a native of Scotland, who retained the smack of his vernacular tongue in its primitive purity. His acquaintance with the language he taught was, I believe, justly deemed to be very accurate and profound. But as to his other acquirements, after excepting the game of backgammon, in which he was said to excel, truth will not warrant me in saying a great deal. He was, however, diligent and laborious in his attention to his school; and had he possessed the faculty of making himself beloved by the scholars, and of exciting their emulation and exertion, nothing would have been wanting in him to an entire qualification for his office. But, unfortunately, he had no dignity of character, and was no less destitute of the art of making himself respected than beloved. Though not, perhaps, to be complained of as intolerably severe, he yet made a pretty free use of the ratan and the ferule, but to very little purpose. He was, in short, no disciplinarian, and, consequently, very unequal to the management of seven-

ty or eighty boys, many of whom were superlatively pickle and unruly. He was assisted, indeed, by two ushers, who eased him in the burden of teaching, but who, in matters of discipline, seemed disinclined to interfere, and disposed to consider themselves rather as subjects than rulers. I have seen them slily slip out of the way when the principal was entering upon the job of capitally punishing a boy, who, from his size, would be likely to make resistance. For this had become nearly a matter of course; and poor Beveridge, who was diminutive in his stature, and neither young nor vigorous, after exhausting himself in the vain attempt to denude the delinquent, was generally glad to compound for a few strokes over his clothes, on any part that was accessible. He had, indeed, so frequently been foiled, that his birch at length was rarely brought forth, and might truly be said to have lost its terrors—it was *tanquam gladium in vagina repositum*. He indemnified himself, however, by a redoubled use of his ratan.

So entire was the want of respect towards him, and so liable was he to be imposed upon, that one of the larger boys, for a wager, once pulled off his wig, which he effected by suddenly twitching it from his head, under pretence of brushing from it a spider; and the unequivocal insult was only resented by the peevish exclamation of *Hoot, mon!*

Various were the rogueries that were played upon him; but the most audacious of all was the following. At the hour of convening in the afternoon, that being found the most convenient, from the circumstance of Mr Beveridge being usually a little beyond the time; the bell having rung, the ushers being at their posts, and the scholars arranged in their classes, three or four of

the conspirators conceal themselves without, for the purpose of observing the motions of their victim. He arrives, enters the school, and is permitted to proceed until he is supposed to have nearly reached his chair at the upper end of the room, when instantly the door and every window-shutter is closed. Now, shrouded in utter darkness, the most hideous yells that can be conceived are sent forth from at least threescore of throats; and Ovids, and Virgils, and Horaces, together with the more heavy metal of dictionaries, whether of Cole, of Young, or of Ainsworth, are hurled without remorse at the head of the astonished preceptor, who, on his side, groping and crawling under cover of the forms, makes the best of his way to the door. When attained, and light restored, a death-like silence ensues. Every boy is at his lesson: no one has had a hand or a voice in the recent atrocity: what, then, is to be done, and who shall be chastised?

Stevit atrox Volscens, nec teli conspicit usquam
Auctorem, nec quo se ardens immittere possit.
Fierce Volscens foams with rage, and gazing round
Descries not him who aim'd the fatal wound;
Nor knows to fix revenge.——

This most intolerable outrage, from its succeeding beyond expectation, and being entirely to the taste of the school, had a run of several days; and was only then put a stop to by the interference of the *faculty*, who decreed the most exemplary punishment on those who should be found offending in the premises, and by taking measures to prevent a further repetition of the enormity.

I have said, and with truth, that I was no promoter of mischief; but I will not take upon me to assert, that I was proof against the irresistible contagion of such a

scene, or that I did not raise my voice in the discordant concert of the screamers: though I can safely declare, that I never threw at the master, and that I was wholly ignorant of the contrivers and ringleaders of this shameful proceeding.

In the year 1765, Mr Beveridge published by subscription a small collection of Latin poems. Of their general merit I presume not to judge, but I think I have heard they were not much commended by the British reviewers. The Latinity probably is pure, the prosody correct, the versification sufficiently easy and sounding, and such as might serve to evince an intimate acquaintance with the classics of ancient Rome: But I should doubt their possessing much of the soul of poetry. One of them is neither more nor less than a humble petition in hexamaters, and certainly a very curious specimen of pedantic mendicity. It is addressed to Thomas Penn, the proprietary of Pennsylvania; and the poet very modestly proposes, that he should bestow upon him a few of his acres, innumerable, he observes, as the sands of the Delaware; in return for which, his verse shall do its best to confer immortal fame upon the donor. By way of further inducement to the gift, he sets before his excellency the usual ingratitude of an enriched and unknown posterity, on the one hand; and on the other, the advantages which Ajax, Æneas, and Mæcenas, derived from the muses of Homer, of Virgil, and Horace. But lest I might be suspected of misrepresentation, let my good quondam preceptor speak for himself.

Jugera quum tibi sint quot habet Delavarus arenas,
Quid magnum minimo tribuas si propria parvæ
Fundamenta casæ, Boreæ quâ frigora pellam.
Non dabis ingrato dederis licet æris egeno,

Quodque tibi minimum, magnum esset paaca roganti.
Sin renuas, tanti nec sint commercia nostra,
Hoc quoque ne pigeat cito spem præcidere vanam.

Nec periisse puta, dederis quod vivus amico;
Credere fas sit enim, si quid mea carmina possint,
Sera licet, majora feras quam MEXICO nobis,
Seu Tagus auriferis exundans mittit arenis;
Auguror et si quid vives post fata superstes.

Quid juvat ignotis, ingratis forsitan, auri
Pondera, frugiferis vel millia jugera campis
Linquere post natis? Nequeunt nam prodere famam
Divitiæ, nequeunt titulis monumenta superbis.

Quid foret Æneas, et magni nominis Ajax,
Atque alii quorum sunt nomina multa virorum;
Ni foret et vates divini carminis auctor
Mæonides, sacro qui primus vertice Pindi
Deduxit faciles Phœbo plaudente, Camœnas?

Vel quid Mæcenas animi mentisque benignæ
Ni benefacta sui celebrasset carmen Horati,
Et Maro munificum cecinisset gratus amicum? &c. &c.

Might not one here be tempted to exclaim, in the spirit of Prior to Boileau!

Pindar, that eagle mounts the skies,
While virtue leads the noble way:
Too like a vulture *Bev'ridge* flies
Where sordid int'rest lures the prey.

I never heard, however, that the poet was the better for his application: I rather think that the proprietor was of opinion, there was a want of reciprocity in the proposal, and that, whatever the *carmen Horati vel Maronis* might have been worth, that of Mr Beveridge did not amount to a very valuable consideration.

Another of the principal poems in this collection is a pastoral, which, if Mr Beveridge had had the salutary

fear of Boileau before his eyes, he certainly would not have written; since, never was production more completely under the lash of the following satirical lines:

> Viendrai-je, en une Eglogue entouré de troupeaux
> Au milieu de Paris enfler mes chalumeaux,
> Et dans mon cabinet assis au pied des hêtres,
> Faire dire aux echos des sottises champêtres?

The complainant in this pastoral is an Edinburgh cit, whom he appropriately calls Urbanus: nevertheless he is, without the smallest difficulty, transformed into a shepherd, surrounded with sheep, and proclaiming to the echoes his *sottises champêtres*, in strains like these:

> Audiit et planctus gemebunda remurmurat Echo.
> Echo sola meos miserata est, inquit amores;
> Tristia nam mœstis ex saxis assonat imis,
> Flebile luctisonis responsat et usque cicutis.
> Me miserum quoties exclamo, lugubris illa
> Me miserum ingeminat gelidis e vallibus: Eheu,
> Clamanti exclamat, repetitis vocibus, Eheu!

But after all, it is perhaps too much to expect from a modern, good Latin, good poetry, and good sense, all at the same time.

As it frequently happens in human affairs, that men are misplaced, and that those found in a subordinate station are better fitted for the supreme authority than those who are invested with it, so it generally was in the Latin school of the academy. The ushers, during the term of my pupilage, a period of four years or more, were often changed; and some of them, it must be admitted, were insignificant enough: but others were men of sense and respectability, to whom, on a comparison with the principal, the management of the school might have been committed with much advantage. Among these was

Mr Patrick Allison, afterwards officiating as a Presbyterian clergyman in Baltimore; Mr James Wilson, late one of the associate justices of the supreme court of the United States; and Mr John Andrews, now Dr Andrews, of the University of Pennsylvania. It is true they were much younger men than Mr Beveridge, and probably unequal adepts in the language that was taught; but, even on the supposition of this comparative deficiency on their part, it would have been amply compensated on the score of judicious discipline and instruction.

With respect to my progress, and that of the class to which I belonged, it was reputable, and, perhaps, laudable, for the first two years. From a pretty close application, we were well grounded in grammar, and had passed through the elementary books, much to the approbation of our teachers; but, at length, with a single exception, we became possessed of the demons of liberty and idleness. We were, to a great degree, impatient of the restraints of a school; and if we yet retained any latent sparks of the emulation of improvement, we were, unfortunately, never favoured with the collision that could draw them forth. We could feelingly have exclaimed with Louis the Fourteenth, *Mais à quois sert de lire!* but where's the use of all this poring over books! One boy thought he had Latin enough, as he was not designed for a learned profession; his father thought so too, and was about taking him from school. Another was of opinion that he might be much better employed in a counting-house, and was also about ridding himself of his scholastic shackles. As this was a consummation devoutly wished by us all, we cheerfully renounced the learned professions for the sake of the supposed liberty

that would be the consequence. We were all, therefore, to be merchants, as to be mechanics was too humiliating; and, accordingly, when the question was proposed, which of us would enter upon the study of Greek, the grammar of which tongue was about to be put into our hands, there were but two or three who declared for it. As to myself, it was my mother's desire, from her knowing it to have been my father's intention to give me the best education the country afforded, that I should go on, and acquire every language and science that was taught in the institution; but, as my evil star would have it, I was thoroughly tired of books and confinement, and her advice, and even entreaties, were overruled by my extreme repugnance to a longer continuance in the college, which, to my lasting regret, I bid adieu to when a little turned of fourteen, at the very season when the minds of the studious begin to profit by instruction. We were at this time reading Horace and Cicero, having passed through Ovid, Virgil, Cæsar, and Sallust. From my own experience on this occasion, I am inclined to think it of much consequence that a boy, designed to complete his college studies, should be classed with those of a similar destination.

Of a dozen or more class-mates, the lapse of more than forty years puts it out of my power to recognise more than three of them, who are yet alive; though there may be others settled at a distance. One of those, who was the exception to the idle propensity I have mentioned, has lately filled an important office in the state; another of them, though a boy of good parts and much vivacity, early betook himself to a very retired walk of life, from which he never emerged; and the third, with whom I have ever continued in the closest

intimacy and friendship, leads, in ease and affluence on his paternal estate, the happy life of a country gentleman, within a convenient distance of the metropolis.

In making this enumeration, there occurs to me a member, who joined us, perhaps, about a year before I left the college. I cannot call him a boy, since he was married, and, for ought I know, between thirty and forty years of age. His puckered cheeks, at least, would have justified the latter part of this conjecture. He was preparing himself for the pulpit of an Anabaptist meeting-house; and although the acquisition of his Latin was sufficiently arduous in all conscience, he was yet courageous enough to be looking forward to the attainment also of the Greek and the Hebrew. With a rueful length of visage, and features of the coarsest mould, his figure was tall, raw-boned, and ungainly, and certainly a very heterogeneous ingredient in the mass in which he had chosen to compound it. But he was not more distinguished by the uncouthness of his appearance than by the meekness of his deportment. It was of the back of this overgrown school-boy that Beveridge usually strove to avail himself in those abortive flagellating efforts I have mentioned; and the function, however unpleasing to the Brobdingnagian, he had too strong a sense of duty to decline. Such was the personage, who, from a clerical ardour, had been tempted to transform himself into this scholastic phenomenon. His name, I think, was Stevens; and though I have amused myself with the recollection of his ludicrous attributes, it is with still more satisfaction I bear testimony to those, that, from their simple benevolence, were truly respectable.

CHAPTER II.

Retrospective Events in the Author's History—Philadelphia—Foot-races—The Paxton Boys threaten the City—Anecdotes of two British Officers—Author's early Amusements—Sailing—Swimming—Skating—Correction of the Abbé Raynal—British Coffeehouse—Anecdotes of its Visitors.

ALTHOUGH it was in my fifteenth year, as already mentioned, that I took my leave of the academy, yet the circumstances I am now about to advert to were antecedent to that event, and are to be considered as having taken place within the five years preceding it.

Among the persons who were acquainted and visited at my grandfather's were Dr Laughlin Maclean and his lady. The latter rarely missed a day, when the weather was favourable, of calling upon her countrywoman, my grandmother; and I well remember, she was always attended, or rather preceded, by a small white dog, enormously fat, in which quality he even exceeded his mistress, who yielded to few of her species and sex in the possession of an enviable *embonpoint*. The Doctor was considered to have great skill in his profession, as well as to be a man of wit and general information; but I have never known a person who had a more distressing impediment in his speech. Yet, notwithstanding this misfortune, he, some years after, on his return to Europe, had

the address to recommend himself to a seat in the British House of Commons. He is understood to be the same Laughlin Maclean who, at Edinburgh, evinced a generous benevolence in administering to the relief of the celebrated Oliver Goldsmith, as related in the life of that poet; and it is this circumstance which has principally induced me to notice him here.

About the year 1760 or 1761, to the best of my recollection, the city was alarmed by a visitation of the yellow fever. I can say nothing of the extent of its ravages, having been, happily, too young to be infected with the panic it produced, or to have been at all interested in the inquiry, whether it had an adequate cause. My impression rather was, that it was an occurrence by no means to be deprecated, since the schools were shut up, and a vacation of five or six weeks its fortunate consequence. As the city was deserted by such as could leave it without too much inconvenience, my grandfather took refuge at his country house, near Germantown, whither, as one of his family, I accompanied him, and remained there until the danger was supposed to be over.

It was in the fall, probably, of this very year, that my mother removed to Philadelphia, in the view of keeping a lodging-house; an employment, which, in Pennsylvania, has been the usual resource of persons in her situation, that is, of widows, reputably brought up, left in circumstances too slender for the support of their families. She began with taking boys who went to the academy, of which there were generally a number from the southern provinces and the West India islands. Being thus established, I left my grandfather's for her house; and, by this change of residence, bid adieu to the old route,

which, for about two years, I had traversed, in going to and returning from school, in the winter four times, and in the summer six times a-day. I had my choice, indeed, of different streets, and sometimes varied my course; but it generally led me through what is now called Dock Street, then a filthy uncovered sewer, bordered on either side by shabby stables and tan-yards. To these succeeded the more agreeable object of Israel Pemberton's garden, (now covered in part by the Bank of the United States,) laid out in the old fashioned style of uniformity, with walks and alleys nodding to their brothers, and decorated with a number of evergreens, carefully clipped into pyramidal and conical forms. Here the amenity of the view usually detained me for a few minutes. Thence, turning Chesnut Street corner to the left, and passing a row of dingy two storey houses, I came to the Whalebones, which gave name to the alley at the corner of which they stood. These never ceased to be occasionally an object of some curiosity, and might be called my second stage, beyond which there was but one more general object of attention, and this was to get a peep at the race-horses, which, in sporting seasons, were kept in the Widow Nichols's stables, which, from her house, (the Indian Queen, at the corner of Market Street,) extended, perhaps, two-thirds, or more, of the way to Chesnut Street. In fact, throughout the whole of my route, the intervals took up as much ground as the buildings; and, with the exception of here and there a straggling house, Fifth Street might have been called the western extremity of the city.

My course was much shortened by the removal to my mother's, who had taken a house in Arch Street, facing the Friends' burying-ground. The first lads that were placed with her were two brothers, the sons of a Colonel

Lewis of Virginia. The younger, named Samuel, about a year older than myself, had the attractions of a pleasing countenance and great gentleness of manners. Though he belonged to a younger class than mine, the living and sleeping together were sufficient to cement a warm attachment between us, and there was not a boy in the school in whose welfare and competitions I took so decided an interest; the ardour of which was in almost perpetual requisition, from the circumstance of his being a champion in the gymnastic exercise of running, which was then the rage. The enthusiasm of the turf had pervaded the academy, and the most extravagant transports of that theatre, on the triumph of a favourite horse, were not more zealous and impassioned, than were the acclamations which followed the victor in a foot-race round a square. Stripped to the shirt, and accoutred for the heat by a handkerchief bound round the head, another round the middle, with loosened knee-bands, without shoes, or with moccasons instead of them, the racers were started; and, turning to the left, round the corner of Arch Street, they encompassed the square in which the academy stands; while the most eager spectators, in imitation of those who scour across the course at a horse-race, scampered over the church burying-ground to Fifth Street, in order to see the state of the runners as they passed, and to ascertain which was likely to be foremost, on turning Market Street corner. The four sides of this square cannot be much less than three quarters of a mile; wherefore, bottom in the coursers was no less essential than swiftness; and, in both, Lewis bore away the palm from every one that dared enter against him. After having, in a great number of matches, completely triumphed over the academy, other schools were resorted to for

racers, but all in vain: Lewis was the Eclipse that distanced every competitor, the swift-footed Achilles, against the vigorous agility of whose straight and well-proportioned form, the long-legged stride of the overgrown, and the nimble step of the dapper, were equally unavailing. I was scarcely less elated with his triumphs than if I myself had been the victor. I was even supremely happy in the circumstance, which gave me a claim to a more than common degree of interest in him; and from my experience of the force of these associations, in which, by a kind of metonymy, we take the place of the real agent, I can fully enter into the feelings of the butcher, who, ecstasied at the good behaviour of his dog at a bull-beating, exclaimed to Charles the Second—"Damme, Sir, if that isn't my dog!"—Since the time of those exploits, in which I was too young to enter the lists, I have valued myself upon my own agility in running and jumping; but I have never had the vanity to suppose that, at my best, I could have contended, with any chance of success, in so long a race against Lewis.

At what time I was separated from this friend of my youth I cannot remember; but have to regret, that I lost the opportunity of seeing him, when several years afterwards, having I know not what business in Philadelphia which required dispatch, he called upon me one evening when I chanced to be out, and as he was obliged to leave the city very early in the morning, staid in the hope of meeting me till a very late hour. But my engagements unfortunately detained me too long, and he had been obliged to depart before I returned. This could not have been long before the war, probably between the year 1770 and 1772, when we had both at-

tained to years of manhood; but whatever may have been his destiny, I have never since heard of him. *

Of all the cities in the world, Philadelphia was for its size, perhaps, one of the most peaceable and unwarlike; and Grant was not wholly without data for supposing, that, with an inconsiderable force, he could make his way, at least, through Pennsylvania. So much had the manners of the Quakers, and its long exemption from hostile alarm, nourished this disposition, that a mere handful of lawless frontier men was found sufficient to throw the capital into consternation. The unpunished, and even applauded massacre of certain Indians at Lancaster, who, in the jail of that town, had vainly flattered themselves that they possessed an asylum, had so encouraged their murderers, who called themselves *Paxton Boys*, that they threatened to perpetrate the like enormity upon a number of other Indians, under the protection of government in the metropolis; and for this purpose, they at length put themselves in arms, and actually began their march. Their force, though known to be small in the beginning, continually increased as it went along, the *vires acquirit eundo* being no less the attribute of terror than of fame. Between the two, the invaders were augmented to some thousands by the time they had approached within a day or two's journey of their object. To the credit, however, of the Philadelphians, every possible effort was made to frustrate the inhuman design

* It is not only possible, but probable, that he might have been one of the Lewis's who defeated the Indians in the great battle of Point Pleasant in the year 1774. There was a General and a Colonel Lewis, brothers, the latter of whom fell in the action. See Cuming's Tour, p. 123.

of the banditti; and the Quakers, as well as others, who had proper feelings on the occasion, exerted themselves for the protection of the terrified Indians, who were shut up in the barracks, and for whose more immediate defence, part of a British regiment of foot was stationed there. But the citadel, or place of arms, was in the very heart of the city, all around and within the old court-house and Friends' meeting-house. Here stood the artillery, under the command of Captain Loxley, a very honest, though little, dingy-looking man, with regimentals, considerably war-worn or tarnished; a very salamander or *fire drake* in the public estimation, whose vital air was deemed the fume of sulphureous explosion, and who, by whatever means he had acquired his science, was always put foremost when great guns were in question. Here it was that the grand stand was to be made against the approaching invaders, who, if rumour might be credited, had now extended their murderous purposes, beyond the savages, to their patrons and abettors. Hence, the cause had materially changed its complexion, and, instead of resting on a basis of mere humanity and plighted faith, it had emphatically become the cause of self-preservation; little doubt being entertained that the capital would be sacked, in case of the predominance of the barbarous foe. In this state of consternation and dismay, all business was laid aside for the more important occupation of arms. Drums, colours, rusty halberts and bayonets, were brought forth from their lurking-places; and, as every good citizen who had a sword had girded it to his thigh, so every one who had a gun had placed it on his shoulder. In short, *bella, horrida bella*, war, destructive war, was about to desolate the hitherto peaceful streets of Philadelphia.

But with all this, the old proverb was not belied; and the benign influence of this *ill wind* was sensibly felt by us school-boys. The dreaded event was overbalanced in our minds by the holidays which were the effect of it; and, so far as I can recall my feelings on the occasion, they very much preponderated on the side of hilarity.

As the defensive army was without eyes, it had, of course, no better information than such as common bruit could supply; and hence, many untoward consequences ensued: One was the near extinction of a troop of mounted butchers from Germantown, who, scampering down Market Street with the best intentions in the world, were announced as the Paxton Boys, and by this mistake, very narrowly escaped a greeting from the rude throats of Captain Loxley's artillery. The word FIRE was already quivering on his lips, but Pallas came in shape of something, and suppressed it. Another emanation from this unmilitary defect of vision was the curious order, that every householder in Market Street should affix one or more candles at his door before daylight, on the morning of the day, on which, from some sufficient reason no doubt, it had been elicited that the enemy would full surely make his attack, and by no other than this identical route, on the citadel. Whether this illumination was merely intended to prevent surprise, or whether it was that the commander who enjoined it was determined, like Ajax, that, if perish he must, he would perish in the face of day, I do not know, but certain it is, that such a decree went forth, and was religiously complied with. This I can affirm, from the circumstance of having resided in Market Street at the time. The sage precaution, however, proved superfluous, although, with respect merely to the nearness of the re-

doubted invaders, there was colour for it. It was soon ascertained that they had reached Germantown, and a deputation of the least obnoxious citizens, with the olive branch, was sent out to meet them. After a parley of some days, an armistice was agreed upon, and peace at length so effectually restored, that the formidable stragglers, who had excited so much terror, were permitted, as friends, to enter the city.

Party spirit, at this time, ran very high, and the Paxton men were not without a number of clamorous advocates who entirely justified them on the score of their sufferings from the savages, who, during the war, had made incursions upon them, and murdered their kindred and friends. It was even alleged, that the pretended friendly Indians had been treacherous, having always maintained an understanding with the hostile ones, and frequently conducted them into our settlements: But this rested on mere suspicion, without a shadow of proof that ever I heard of. It was enough, however, to throw it out to obtain partizans to the opinion; and, whether the Paxton men were "more sinned against than sinning," was a question which was agitated with so much ardour and acrimony, that even the school-boys became warmly engaged in the contest. For my own part, though of the religious sect which had been long warring with the Quakers, I was entirely on the side of humanity and public duty, (or in this, do I beg the question?) and perfectly recollect my indignation at the sentiments of one of the ushers who was on the opposite side. His name was Davis, and he was really a kind, good natured man; yet, from the dominion of his religious or political prejudices, he had been led to apologize for, if not to approve of, an outrage, which was a dis-

grace to a civilized people. He had been among the riflemen on their coming into the city, and talking with them upon the subject of the Lancaster massacre, and particularly of the killing of Will Sock, the most distinguished of the victims, related with an air of approbation, this rodomontade of the real or pretended murderer. "I," said he, "am the man who killed Will Sock —this is the arm that stabbed him to the heart, and I glory in it." Notwithstanding the fine colouring of Mr Davis, young as I was, I am happy in being able to say, that I felt a just contempt for the inglorious boaster, who appeared to me in the light of a cowardly ruffian, instead of a hero. There was much political scribbling on this occasion; and among the pamphleteers of the day, Dr Franklin drew his pen in behalf of the Indians, giving a very affecting narrative of the transaction at Lancaster, which, no doubt, had its effect in regulating public opinion, and thereby putting a stop to the further violence that was meditated.

But it was not alone by hostile alarms that the good people of Philadelphia were annoyed. Their tranquillity had been likewise disturbed by the uncitizenlike conduct of a pair of British officers, who, for want of something better to do, had plunged themselves into an excess of intemperance; and, in the plenitude of wine and hilarity, paraded the streets at all hours,

A la clarté de cieux dans l'ombre de la nuit,

to the no small terror of the sober and the timid. The firm of this duumvirate was Ogle and Friend, names always coupled together, like those of Castor and Pollux, or of Pylades and Orestes. But the cement which connected them was scarcely so pure as that which had

united those heroes of antiquity. It could hardly be called friendship, but was rather a confederacy in debauchery and riot, exemplified in a never ending round of frolic and fun. It was related of Ogle, that, upon hiring a servant, he had stipulated with him that he should never get drunk but when his master was sober. But the fellow some time after requested his discharge, giving for his reason, that he had in truth no dislike to a social glass himself, but it had so happened, that the terms of the agreement had absolutely cut him off from any chance of ever indulging his propensity.

Many are the pranks I have heard ascribed, either conjointly or separately, to this *par nobile fratrum*. That of Ogle's first appearance in Philadelphia has been thus related to me by Mr Will Richards, the apothecary, who, it is well known, was, from his size and manner, as fine a figure for Falstaff as the imagination can conceive. "One afternoon," said he, "an officer in full regimentals, booted and spurred, with a whip in his hand, spattered with mud from top to toe, and reeling under the effects of an overdose of liquor, made his entrance into the coffeehouse, in a box of which I was sitting, perusing a newspaper. He was probably under the impression, that every man he was to meet would be a Quaker, and that a Quaker was no other than a licensed Simon Pure for his amusement: for no sooner had he entered, than, throwing his arms about the neck of Mr Joshua Fisher, with the exclamation of—'Ah, my dear Broadbrim, give me a kiss,' he began to slaver him most lovingly. As Joshua was a good deal embarrassed by the salutation, and wholly unable to parry the assault or shake off the fond intruder, I interfered in his behalf, and effected a separation, when Ogle, turning to

me, cried out, 'Hah! my jolly fellow, give me a smack of your fat chops,' and immediately fell to hugging and kissing me, as he had done Fisher. But, instead of the coyness he had shown, I hugged and kissed in my turn as hard as I was able, until my weight at length brought Ogle to the floor and myself on top of him: Nevertheless, I kept kissing away, until nearly mashed and suffocated, he exclaimed, 'For heaven's sake let me up, let me up, or you will smother me!' Having sufficiently tormented him and avenged Joshua Fisher, I permitted him to rise, when he seemed a good deal sobered, and finding that I was neither a Quaker nor wholly ignorant of the world, he evinced some respect for me, took a seat with me in a box, and entering into conversation, soon discovered, that, however he might be disguised by intoxication, he well knew what belonged to the character of a gentleman."—"This," said Richards, "was the commencement of an acquaintance between us; and Captain Ogle sometimes called to see me, upon which occasions he always behaved with the utmost propriety and decorum."

This same coffeehouse, the only one, indeed, in the city, was also the scene of another affray by Ogle and Friend in conjunction. I know not what particular acts of mischief they had been guilty of, but they were very drunk, and their conduct so extremely disquieting and insulting to the peaceable citizens there assembled, that, being no longer able to endure it, it was judged expedient to commit them; and Mr Chew happening to be there, undertook, in virtue probably of his office of recorder, to write their commitment: But Ogle, facetiously jogging his elbow, and interrupting him with a repetition of the pitiful interjection of "*Ah now, Mr*

Chew!" he was driven from his gravity, and obliged to throw away the pen. It was then taken up by Alderman M——n, with a determination to go through with the business, when the culprits reeling round him, and Ogle in particular, hanging over his shoulder and reading after him as he wrote, at length, with irresistible effect, hit upon an unfortunate oversight of the alderman. "Ay," says he, "my father was a justice of peace too, but he did not spell that word as you do. I remember perfectly well, that, instead of an S, he always used to spell CIRCUMSTANCE with a C." This sarcastic thrust at the scribe entirely turned the tide in favour of the rioters, and the company being disarmed of their resentment, the alderman had no disposition to provoke further criticism by going on with the *mittimus*.

The irregularities of these gay rakes were not more eccentric than diversified; and the more extravagant they could render them, the better. At one time, they would drive full tilt through the streets in a chair; and upon one of these occasions, on approaching a boom which had been thrown across the street, in a part that was undergoing the operation of paving, they lashed forward their steed, and sousing against the spar with great violence, they were consequently hurled from their seats, like Don Quixote in his temerarious assault of the windmills. At another time, at Dr Orme's the apothecary, where Ogle lodged, they, in emulation of the same mad hero at the puppet-show, laid about them with their canes upon the defenceless bottles and phials, at the same time assaulting a diminutive Maryland parson, whom, in their frolic, they kicked from the street door to the kitchen. He was a fellow lodger of Ogle's, and, to make him some amends for the roughness of this

usage, they shortly after took him drunk to the dancing assembly, where, through the instrumentality of this unworthy son of the church, they contrived to excite a notable hubbub. Though they had escaped, as already mentioned, at the coffeehouse, yet their repeated malfeasances had brought them within the notice of the civil authority; and they had more than once been in the clutches of the mayor of the city. This was Mr S——, a small man, of a squat, bandy-legged figure; and hence, by way of being revenged on him, they bribed a negro, with a precisely similar pair of legs, to carry him a billet, which imported, that, as the bearer had in vain searched the town for a pair of hose that might fit him, he now applied to his honour to be informed where he purchased HIS stockings.

I have been told that General Lee, when a captain in the British service, had got involved in this vortex of dissipation; and although afterwards so strenuous an advocate for the civil rights of the Americans, had been made to smart severely for their violation, by the mayor's court of Philadelphia.

The common observation, that, when men become soldiers, they lose the character and feelings of citizens, was amply illustrated by the general conduct of the British officers in America. Their studied contempt of the *mohairs*, by which term all those who were not in uniform were distinguished, was manifest on all occasions. And it is by no means improbable, that the disgust then excited might have more easily ripened into that harvest of discontent which subsequent injuries called forth, and which terminated in a subduction of allegiance from the parent land.

At the era of these various intestine commotions, I

could not have more than completed my twelfth year. My attention to my school exercises, as already observed, was not at this time to be complained of; and a part of my evenings was either employed in writing them or committing them to memory. In relation to the latter, I will mention a circumstance which to me appeared remarkable, though perhaps it was not peculiar. After labouring in vain to master my task, I have gone to bed, scarcely able to repeat a line of it, but in the morning when I awoke, it has been perfect in my memory. The same thing has often occurred in respect to tunes I have been desirous of acquiring; and, indeed, I have ever found, that the morning was the propitious season for the exertion of my mental faculties. But though not materially deficient in attention, it had not the smallest reference to future utility; and something less than

> A wizard might have said,
> I ne'er should rise by benefice or trade.

A scramble was ever my aversion, and the unthriftiness of my character might also have been inferred, from my indifference to those games which have gain for their object. I never could boast my winnings at marbles or chuckers, and as I chiefly played them for pastime, I never attained to that degree of perfection in them, which the keener stimulus of profit is calculated to produce, and which alone perhaps can lead to the fame of a *dabster*. When in possession of any of these implements that were reckoned handsome or good, I never felt the inclination I have observed in those of better trading parts, of turning them into pence; with me they were hobby-horses, not articles of commerce; and though I had no dislike to money, it never impressed

me as a primary good, a circumstance more essential than may be imagined, to what is called success in life. I do not speak of this as a virtue, and if it were one, I have certainly little reason to rejoice in it. It is not one of those, at least, which leads to riches and advancement; or which, under the world's law, has a right to look for other than its own reward. In gymnastic exercises, however, my relish was keen and altogether orthodox. For those of running, leaping, swimming, and skating, no one had more appetite; and for the enjoyment of these, fatigue and hunger were disregarded. To these succeeded a passion for fowling and boating, fishing being too sedentary and inactive for my taste. If furnished on Saturday afternoon, or other holiday, with cash enough for the purchase of powder and shot, or the hire of a batteau or skiff, as the propensity of the day might incline, I had nothing more to wish for. In my land rambles, the environs of Philadelphia, for several miles round, were thoroughly traversed, from the uplands of Springetsbury, Bush-hill, and Centre-wood, to the low grounds and meadows of Passyunk and Moyamensing; while, in my water excursions, the sedgy shores of the Delaware, as well as the reedy cover of Pettys, League, and Mud Islands, were pervaded and explored in pursuit of ducks, reed-bird, and rail. No pestilent vapours then arose from these marshes; and, instead of the deadly fevers which have since proceeded from, or been fostered by them, their effluvia gave a zest to the cold morsel in the locker.

But notwithstanding the ardour with which these sports were pursued, I not unfrequently surrendered myself to the reveries of a pleasing melancholy, to which I have ever been occasionally inclined. For hours together

have I sat alone, listening to the church bells, which it was the custom to ring on the evening before market day, and which, from the back part of a house wherein we sometime resided on the south side of Arch Street, were heard to much advantage. Rousseau, who takes great pains to represent himself as different from all others, and who seems to suppose that the mould in which he was cast has been broken, informs us, that the chimes of bells always singularly affected him. But the lively testimony of my own feelings assures me, that never, not even on the day when he took a ramble in the suburbs of Annecy while Madam de Warrens was at vespers, and gave himself up to those delightful illusions, of which he has given so enchanting a description, was he more under the influence of their transporting sounds than I have been. How often has the simple melody of *Turn again Wittington*, "resounding through the empty-vaulted night," completely lifted me from the earth; absorbed me in etherial visions, and sublimed me into such abstraction from this low world and its concerns, as to identify my conceptions with those of the poet, when he exclaims,

> How vain the ardour of the crowd,
> How low, how little are the proud,
> How indigent the great!

The amusements I have been speaking of were of no advantage to me as a student; but what was lost to the mind by my strong addiction to active recreations was gained to the body; and tended to invigorate a constitution naturally tender. My exercises were often carried to toil. I was extremely fond of rowing, and took great delight in feathering my oar, sometimes skimming it along the surface of the water in the manner of a

wherryman, sometimes resting it horizontally between the thole pins in the fashion of a bargeman. I had also made some proficiency in sculling, which appeared to me a highly enviable qualification; but the trimming of sails, laying a boat to the wind, with the management of the helm and the application of the proper terms, were, in my eyes, acquisitions more truly honourable than the best of those which are attained in a college. The subject recalls a memorable expedition I engaged in, when perhaps about the age of thirteen. Returning from morning school at eight o'clock, a boy, a brother of the late Mr Robert Morris, proposed an excursion to Chester, for the purpose of seeing the Coventry frigate which there rode at anchor. From an over greediness of gratification, his plan was to have two boats, whereas one would have been very ample for four of us, the number of the company. But then the projector of the voyage might have found competitors for the helm, which he wished to engross; and had, accordingly, secured an unambitious ship mate, in a son of Captain Loxley, of Paxton-war memory, already mentioned. A skiff he had already prepared for himself and his comrade, and suggested where a batteau might be obtained for the other two of the party, one Corbett, from the island of Montserrat, and myself. Each boat had a sail, and he observed, that, as the wind and tide would be favourable, we could run down in a few hours. I objected, that I had not breakfasted. Neither had he, he said, nor indeed any of us; but this was of little consequence, as we could furnish ourselves with cakes. My mind fluctuated a while between the charms of the adventure, and the impropriety of going without permission, and, consequently, subjecting my mother to a most distressing state of anxiety on

my account: For I was neither an habitual truant-player, nor a contemner of the feelings of a most affectionate parent, though I should have been ashamed to have said so. But such was the eagerness for the frolic with my associates, that it would not admit of a moment's delay; and the allurements of pleasure proving too potent for principle, I yielded to persuasion, and we embarked. It was a fine morning; a gentle breeze propelled us in our course, and in a few hours we were delightfully wafted to the place of destination. We saw the frigate, had the pleasure of sailing round her, the satisfaction of counting her guns, of contemplating her bright sides, (for she appeared to be new,) of admiring her rigging, and the duck-like beauty with which she sat upon the water. But here fruition ended. Water excursions are keen whetters of the appetite, and the calls of hunger began to be importunate. I forget whether we had taken any cakes with us, but if we had, the supply had been very insufficient for the day's provision. Hereupon, a canvass took place of the state of our pockets: they were found empty and pennyless. We were, in short, a miserable crew of *Gautiers sans argent*, and being too proud to beg for victuals, we had no resource but unripe fruit. As the wind was unfavourable to our return, we were obliged to wait for the turning of the tide, and, in the mean time, employed ourselves in sauntering about the village, the orchards, and the shore. We found, too, that we were very much out in our reckoning, the tide of flood not making for above an hour later than our calculation. At length, however, we had the satisfaction to find, that the marks we made in the sand were unequivocally encroached upon by the water, and that floating substances were at a stand, if not really changed

in their direction. We hailed the event, and immediately embarked. But now our toils began. It was already late in the afternoon: The wind, still ahead, had considerably increased, and the lowering aspect of the sky indicated approaching rain. It came on about dusk, and in this situation we had to tug at our oars like galley slaves, for the whole distance of from sixteen to eighteen miles. Then it was we perceived the folly of our two boats. It was between ten and eleven at night when we reached the city, wet, almost starved, and exhausted with labour. As I well knew what must be my mother's cruel situation, I hastened to show myself, and found her a prey to the most afflicting uncertainty. She had not been able to obtain any satisfactory tidings of me, and knew not what to conclude. My trespass, however, being readily forgiven, I appeased my hunger and went to bed. Extreme fatigue, especially when it has been mingled with anxiety, is unfavourable to repose, and I slept but ill. I was tormented with distressing dreams, contending, as it seemed, with tasks above my strength, and buffeting with waves "in night and tempest wrapt."

> Borne by th' outrageous flood
> To distance down, I ride the ridgy wave,
> Or whelm'd beneath the boiling eddy, sink.

The exercises of swimming and skating were so much within the reach of the boys of Philadelphia, that it would have been surprising had they neglected them, or even had they not excelled in them. Both Delaware and Schuylkill present the most convenient and delightful shores for the former, whilst the heat and the length of the summers invite to the luxury of bathing; and the same rivers seldom fail in winter to offer the means of enjoying the latter; and when they do, the

ponds always afford them. Since the art of swimming has been, in some degree, dignified by Dr Franklin's having been a teacher of it, and having made it the subject of a dissertation, I may, perhaps, be warranted in bringing forward my remark. When in practice, I never felt myself spent with it; and though I never undertook to swim further than across Schuylkill, at or near the middle ferry where the bridge now stands, it appeared to me that I could have continued the exercise for hours, and consequently have swum some miles. To recover breath, I only found it necessary to turn upon my back, in which position, with my arms across my body or pressed to my side, since moving them, as many do, answers no other purpose than to retard and fatigue the swimmer; my lungs had free play, and I felt myself as perfectly at ease, as if reclined on a sofa. In short, no man can be an able swimmer, who only swims with his face downward; the pressure of the water on the breast is an impediment to respiration in that attitude, which, for that reason, cannot be long continued; whereas, the only inconvenience in the supine posture is, that the head sinks so low, that the ears are liable to receive water, a consequence which might be prevented by stopping them with wool or cotton, or covering them with a bathing-cap.

With respect to skating, though the Philadelphians have never reduced it to rules like the Londoners, nor connected it with their business like Dutchmen, I will yet hazard the opinion, that they were the best and most elegant skaters in the world. I have seen New England skaters, Old England skaters, and Holland skaters, but the best of them could but make "the judicious grieve." I was once slightly acquainted with a

worthy gentleman, the quondam member of a skating club in London, and it must be admitted, that he performed very well for an Englishman. His *High Dutch*, or, as he better termed it, his *outer edge* skating, might, for aught I know, have been exactly conformable to the statutes of this institution: To these he would often appeal; and I recollect the principal one was, that each stroke should describe an exact semicircle. Nevertheless, his style was what we should deem a very bad one. An utter stranger to the beauty of bringing forward the suspended foot towards the middle of the stroke, and boldly advancing it before the other, at the conclusion of it, thus to preserve, throughout his course, a continuity of movement, to rise like an ascending wave to its acme, then, gracefully like a descending one, to glide into the succeeding stroke without effort, either real or apparent—every change of foot with this gentleman seemed a beginning of motion, and required a most unseemingly jerk of the body; an unequivocal evidence of the want of that power, which depends upon a just balance, and should never be lost—which carries the skater forward with energy without exertion; and is as essential to his swift and graceful career, as is a good head of water to the velocity of a mill wheel. Those who have seen good skating will comprehend what I mean, still better those who are adepts themselves; but excellence in the art can never be gained by geometrical rules. The two reputed best skaters of my day were General Cadwallader, and Massey the biscuit-baker; but I could name many others, both of the academy and Quaker school, who were in no degree inferior to them; whose action and attitudes were equally graceful, and, like theirs, no less worthy of the chi-

sel than those, which, in other exercises, have been selected to display the skill of the eminent sculptors of antiquity. I here speak, be it observed, of what the Philadelphians *were*, not what they *are*, since I am unacquainted with the present state of the art; and as, from my lately meeting with young men, who, though bred in the city, had not learnt to swim, I infer the probability that skating is equally on the decline.

The Abbé Raynal, when speaking of Philadelphia, in his Philosophical History of the East and West Indies, observes, that the houses are covered with slate, a material amply supplied from quarries in the neighbourhood. But, unfortunately for the source from which the Abbé derived this piece of information, there were no such quarries near the city that ever I heard of, and certainly but a single house in it with this kind of roof; which, from that circumstance, was distinguished by the name of *The Slate House*. It stood in Second Street, at the corner of Norris's Alley, and was a singular old fashioned structure, laid out in the style of a fortification, with abundance of angles, both salient and re-entering. Its two wings projected to the street, in the manner of bastions; to which the main building, retreating from sixteen to eighteen feet, served for a curtain. Within it was cut up into a number of apartments, and, on that account, was exceedingly well adapted to the purpose of a lodging-house; to which use it had been long appropriated. An additional convenience was a spacious yard on the back of it, extending half way to Front Street, enclosed by a high wall, and ornamented with a double row of venerable lofty pines, which afforded a very agreeable *rus in urbe*, or rural scene, in the heart of the city. The lady who had resided here, and given some cele-

brity to the stand by the style of her accommodations, either dying or declining business, my mother was persuaded by her friends to become her successor; and, accordingly, obtained a lease of the premises, and took possession of them, to the best of my recollection, in the year 1764 or 1765. While in this residence, and in a still more commodious one in the upper part of Front Street, to which she, some years afterwards, removed, she had the honour, if so it might be called, of entertaining strangers of the first rank who visited the city. Those who have seen better days, but have been compelled, by hard necessity, to submit to a way of life, which, to a feeling mind, whoever may be the guests, is sufficiently humiliating, are much indebted to Mr Gibbon, for the handsome manner in which he speaks of the hostess of a boarding-house at Lausanne. With the delicacy of a gentleman, and the discernment of a man of the world, the historian dares to recognise that worth and refinement are not confined to opulence or station; and that although, in the keeper of a house of public entertainment, these qualities are not much to be looked for, yet, when they do occur, the paying for the comforts and attentions we receive does not exempt us from the courtesy of an apparent equality and obligation. An equally liberal way of thinking is adopted by Mr Cumberland, who tells us, in his Memoirs, that the British Coffeehouse was kept by a Mrs Anderson, a person of great respectability. If, then, an education and situation in early life, which enabled my mother to maintain an intercourse in the best families in the city; pretensions in no degree impaired by her matrimonial connection, or an industrious irreproachable conduct in her succeeding years of widowhood, can give a claim to respect, I

have a right to say with Mr Cumberland, that the principal lodging-house in Philadelphia was kept by a person of great respectability.

A biographical sketch of the various personages, who, in the course of eight or nine years, became inmates of this house, might, from the hand of a good delineator, be both curious and amusing. Among these were persons of distinction, and some of no distinction; many real gentlemen, and some, no doubt, who were merely pretenders to the appellation. Some attended by servants in gay liveries; some with servants in plain coats, and some with no servants at all. It was rarely without officers of the British army. It was, at different times, nearly filled by those of the forty-second or Highland regiment, as also by those of the Royal Irish. Besides these, it sometimes accommodated officers of other armies and other uniforms. Of this description was the Baron de Kalb, who visited this country, probably about the year 1768 or 1769; and who fell a major-general in the army of the United States, at the battle of Camden. Though a German by birth, he had belonged to the French service, and had returned to France, after the visit just mentioned. During our revolutionary contest, he came to tender us his services, and returned no more. The steady and composed demeanour of the Baron bespoke the soldier and philosopher; the man who had calmly estimated life and death; and who, though not prodigal of the one, had no unmanly dread of the other. He was not, indeed, a young man; and his behaviour at the time of his death, as I have heard it described by Mons. Dubuisson, his aid-de-camp, was exactly conformable to what might have been supposed from his character.

Another of our foreign guests was one Badourin, who

wore a white cockade, and gave himself out for a general in the Austrian service; but, whether general or not, he, one night, very unexpectedly, left his quarters, making a masterly retreat, with the loss of no other baggage than that of an old trunk, which, when opened, was found to contain only a few old Latin and German books. Among the former was a folio, bound in parchment, which I have now before me. It is a ponderous tract of the mystical Robert Fludd, *alias* De Fluctibus, printed at Oppenheim, in the year 1618, and, in part, dedicated to the Duke of Guise, whom, the author informs us, he had instructed in the art of war. It is to this writer, probably, that Butler thus alludes in his Hudibras:—

> He, Anthroposophus and *Floud*,
> And Jacob Behman understood.

From this work of Mr Fludd, which, among a fund of other important matter, treats of astrology and divination, it is not improbable that its quondam possessor, Mr Badourin, might have been a mountebank-conjurer, instead of a general.

Among those of rank from Great Britain with whose residence we were honoured, I recollect Lady Moore and her daughter, a sprightly miss, not far advanced in her teens, and who having apparently no dislike to be seen, had more than once attracted my attention; for I was just touching that age when such objects begin to be interesting, and excite feelings which disdain the invidious barriers with which the pride of condition would surround itself. Not that the young lady was stately; my vanity rather hinted, she was condescendingly courteous; and I had, no doubt, read of women of quality falling in love with their inferiors. Nevertheless, the extent of my

presumption was a look or a bow, as she now and then tripped along through the entry. Another was Lady Susan OBrien, not more distinguished by her title than by her husband, who accompanied her, and had figured as a comedian on the London stage, in the time of Garrick, Mossop, and Barry. Although Churchhill charges him with being an imitator of Woodward, he yet admits him to be a man of parts; and he has been said to have surpassed all his contemporaries in the character of the fine gentleman; in his easy manner of treading the stage, and particularly of drawing his sword; to which action he communicated a swiftness and a grace which Garrick imitated, but could not equal. Obrien is presented to my recollection as a man of the middle height, with a symmetrical form, rather light than athletic. Employed by the father to instruct Lady Susan in elocution, he taught her, it seems, that it was no sin to love; for she became his wife; and, as I have seen it mentioned in the Theatrical Mirror, obtained for him, through the interest of her family, a post in America. But what this post was, or where it located him, I never heard.

A third person of celebrity and title was Sir William Draper, who made a tour to this country a short time after his newspaper encounter with Junius. It has even been suggested that this very incident sent the knight on his travels. Whether or not it had so important a consequence, it cannot be denied that Sir William *caught a tartar* in Junius; and that, when he commenced his attack, he had evidently underrated his adversary.

During his stay in Philadelphia, no one was so assiduous in his attentions to him as Mr Richardson, better known at that time by the name of Frank Richardson, then from England on a visit to his friends. This gen-

tleman was one of the most singular and successful of American adventurers. The son of one of our plainest Quakers, he gave early indications of that cast of character which has raised him to his present station, that of a colonel in the British Guards. At a time, when such attainments formed no part of education in Pennsylvania, he sedulously employed himself in acquiring skill in the use of the small sword and the pistol, as if to shine as a duellist had been the first object of his ambition. Either from a contempt for the dull pursuits of the "home-keeping youth" of his day, or from the singularity of his propensities repelling association, he was solitary and rarely with companions. Fair and delicate to effeminacy, he paid great attention to his person, which he had the courage to invest in scarlet, in defiance of the society to which he belonged, in whose mind's eye, perhaps as to that of the blind man of Locke, this colour from their marked aversion to it, resembles the sound of a trumpet; and no less in defiance of the plain manners of a city, in which, except on the back of a soldier, a red coat was a phenomenon, and always indicated a Creole, a Carolinian, or a dancing-master. With these qualifications, and these alone perhaps, Mr Richardson, at an early age, shipped himself for England, where soon, having the good fortune to establish a reputation for courage by drawing his sword in behalf of a young man of rank, in a broil at the theatre, he was received into the best company, and thence laid the foundation of his preferment. Such, at least, was the generally received account of his rise. But whether accurate or not, his intimate footing with Sir William is an evidence of the style of his company whilst abroad, as well as of the pro-

priety of his conclusion, that his native land was not his sphere.

As the story went: On Mr Richardson's first going to England, he happened to be in the same lodgings with Foote the comedian, with whom he became intimate. One day, upon his coming out of his chamber, "Richardson," says Foote to him, "a person has just been asking for you, who expressed a strong desire to see you, and pretended to be an old Philadelphia acquaintance. But I knew better, for he was a d——d ill-looking fellow, and I have no doubt the rascal was a bailiff; so I told him you were not at home." But here either Foote's sagacity had been at fault, or he had been playing off a stroke of his humour, the visitor having really been no other than Mr ————, a respectable merchant of Philadelphia, though not a figure the most debonnair to be sure.

From Philadelphia, Sir William passed on to New York, where, if I mistake not, he married. During his residence in that city, he frequently amused himself with a game of rackets, which he played with some address; and he set no small value on the talent. There was a mechanic in the place, the hero of the tennis court, who was so astonishingly superior to other men, that there were few whom he could not beat with one hand attached to the handle of a wheelbarrow. Sir William wished to play with him, and was gratified; the New Yorker having urbanity enough to cede the splendid stranger some advantages, and even in conquering, to put on the appearance of doing it with difficulty: Yet, apart, he declared that he could have done the same with the incumbrance of the wheelbarrow. These are hear-

say facts: They come, however, from persons of credit, in the way of being acquainted with them.

But what imports it the reader to know, that Sir William Draper was a racket-player? Nothing, certainly, unless we reflect, that he was a conspicuous character, the conqueror of Manilla, and still more, the literary opponent of Junius. Without granting something to celebrity of this latter sort, what possible interest could we take in learning that Dr Johnson liked a leg of pork, or that he could swallow twelve or more cups of tea at a sitting?

Major George Etherington, of the Royal Americans, was an occasional inmate of our house, from its first establishment on the large scale, until the time of its being laid down, about the year 1774. He seemed to be always employed in the recruiting service, in the performance of which he had a snug economical method of his own. He generally dispensed with the noisy ceremony of a recruiting coterie; for having, as it was said, and I believe truly, passed through the principal grades in its composition, namely, those of drummer and serjeant, he was a perfect master of the inveigling arts which are practised on the occasion, and could fulfil, at a pinch, all the duties himself. The major's *forte* was a knowledge of mankind, of low life especially; and he seldom scented a subject that he did not, in the end, make his prey. He knew his man, and could immediately discover a fish that would bite: Hence, he wasted no time in angling in wrong waters. His superior height, expansive frame, and muscular limbs, gave him a commanding air among the vulgar; and, while enforcing his suit with all the flippancy of halbert elocution, he familiarly held his booby by the button, his small, black,

piercing eyes, which derived additional animation from the intervention of a sarcastic, upturned nose, penetrated to the fellow's soul, and gave him distinct intelligence of what was passing there. In fact, I have never seen a man with a cast of countenance so extremely subtile and investigating. I have myself, more than once, undergone its scrutiny; for he took a very friendly interest in my welfare, evinced by an occasional superintendence of my education, in so far, at least, as respects the exterior accomplishments. Above all things, he enjoined upon me the cultivation of the French language, of which he had himself acquired a smattering from a temporary residence in Canada; and he gave me a pretty sharp lecture upon a resolution I had absurdly taken up, not to learn dancing, from an idea of its being an effeminate and unmanly recreation. He combated my folly with arguments, of which I have since felt the full force; but which, as they turned upon interests, I was then too young to form conceptions of, they produced neither conviction nor effect. Fortunately for me, I had to deal with a man who was not thus to be baffled. He very properly assumed the rights of mature age and experience, and, accordingly, one day, on my return from school, he accosted me with, "Come here, young man, I have something to say to you," and with a mysterious air conducted me to his chamber. Here I found myself entrapped. Godwin, the assistant of Tioli the dancing-master, was prepared to give me a lesson. Etherington introduced me to him as the pupil he had been speaking of, and saying, he would leave us to ourselves, he politely retired. The arrangement with Tioli was, that I should be attended in the major's room until I was sufficiently drilled for the public school; and the ice thus

broken, I went on, and, instead of standing in a corner, like a goose on one leg, (the major's comparison,) "while music softens, and while dancing fires," I became qualified for the enjoyment of female society, in one of its most captivating forms.

Major Etherington had a brother in the rank of a captain, so like himself, as to realize the story of the two Sosias, and to remove half the improbability of the plot of Shakespeare's Comedy of Errors. Any one, at a first sight, might have mistaken the one for the other, at least I did for a moment; but on a close inspection it would be discovered, that the captain was more scant in his proportions, as well as several years younger than his brother, Tom, for so the captain was familiarly called by the major, had taken his turn to recruit in Philadelphia, while his superior was employed elsewhere. From a comparatively weaker discernment of human character, he had enlisted a lad, and converted him into his waiting man, whom George, on a junction which soon after took place, pronounced to be a fool, and wholly unfit for a soldier. This the captain denied strenuously, and the question became the frequent topic of good humoured altercation between them, until an incident occurred which gave the major an unequivocal triumph. One morning very early, the brothers lodging in the same apartment, this recruit, and, for the first time, common servant of the two, softly approached the bed of the major, and gently tapping him on the shoulder to awaken him, very sapiently inquired, if he might clean his shoes. George, with infinite presence of mind, replied, that it was not material, but "go (says he) and ask my brother Tom if you may clean his." The poor fellow did as he was bid, and probably as he would have done if he had not

been bidden; and Tom's slumbers became victims also to the same momentous investigation. The major took care to relate the circumstance at the breakfast table, and, of course, obtained a unanimous suffrage to his opinion, that the captain's recruit was not exceeding wise.

Although Etherington was extremely deficient in literature, few persons possessed more acuteness of intellect, or a happier talent for prompt replication. A warm dispute having one day taken place at the coffee-house between Mr Bradford, who kept it, and Mr Delancey of New York, in which the parties appeared to be proceeding to blows, Major Etherington stepped between them and separated them. The next day, on a supposition of partiality to Delancey, he was roundly taken to task by Bradford. He observed, that he had merely interfered as a common friend to both. No, Sir, said Bradford, you were the decided champion of Delancey, you laid your hands upon me, and kept your face to me, while your back was turned to him. Very well then, Sir, said Etherington, with quickness, I treated you politely, and Mr Delancey with a rudeness for which I owe him an apology. A ready, unexpected turn of this kind, has always a good effect on the bystanders, and they accordingly lent their aid in restoring good humour.

As I have said that the major commenced his military career in the humblest walks of his profession, the reader may expect to hear of the exploits which produced his extraordinary promotion. But it was not to martial prowess that he owed it. The world gave out, that a certain wealthy widow of the county of Newcastle became enamoured of him, and first purchased him a commission. His saving knowledge soon enabled him

to purchase a better one, and from a captaincy, the station in which I first knew him, he had risen to that of a colonel when I last saw him in Philadelphia, just at the approach of the war. What then brought him there is uncertain. He was, however, taken notice of by the committee of safety; required to hasten his departure, and, in the mean time, put under his parole. He endeavoured to make a jest of the matter, by assuring them, that they need not be under the least apprehension of his going an inch nearer to the scene where fighting was to be looked for. He several times called to see us while in town, and observing me in the light infantry uniform, he undertook to recommend to me, between banter and earnest, that, if I inclined to a military life, at once to get a commission in the British service, which he would charge himself to procure for me; that, as to our idle parade in war, it would vanish in smoke, or, if seriously persisted in, would infallibly terminate in our disgrace, if not ruin. I asked him if he had been to see us exercise. "Oh no," said he, "that would be highly improper; we make it a point in the army never to look at awkward men; we hold it unpolite." The colonel was, no doubt, correct in his opinion of our tactics; though I was nettled a little at his contemptuous manner of treating us. But I here dismiss him with the observation, that he was a singular man, who knew the world, and turned that knowledge to his advantage. He had certainly much mental ability, and of a cast which he himself would have well qualified him for the bar; a profession for which, he has told me, nature intended him. In this estimate of his talents, however, it is not improbable that he might have attributed too much to management and chicane, which

had essentially availed him in the business of recruiting: for he valued himself upon them here; and I well remember, that, upon my mother's telling him of Captain Anstruther, who had recruited in his absence, sending a drum about before he left the city, to proclaim, that, if any one had been aggrieved by him or his party, to call upon him and he should be redressed, he replied, —"And wasn't he a d——d fool for his pains?" In mentioning Captain Anstruther, it occurs to me, that he may be the same who is stated to have fallen as a general officer in the battle of Corunna.

There were two other majors, with whose company we were a long time favoured. These were Majors Small and Fell; and if names had any appropriation to the persons of those who bear them, these might very well have been interchanged; for Small was a stout, athletic man, who might be supposed to possess a capacity for *felling*, while the other was one of the smallest men I have seen. Some one asking one day if Major Small was at home? "No," says Fell, "but the *small major* is." Small is a principal figure in Trumbull's print of the death of Warren. He is represented in the humane attitude of putting aside with his sword a British bayonet, aimed at the breast of the dying patriot.

Another officer of the British army who was sometime our inmate, is suggested by a notice of his death in the Monthly Magazine of March 1807. This was General John Reid, who is stated to have died in his 87th year, the oldest officer in the service. In this account of him it is said, that, in the meridian of his life, he was esteemed the best gentleman German-flute performer in England: that he was also particularly famed for his

taste in the composition of military music, and that his marches are still admired. This gentleman was a colonel at the time I speak of him. His fame as a performer on the flute I recollect, as also to have heard him play; but probably I was too little of a connoisseur to duly appreciate his talents. I cannot say that my expectations were fully answered; his tones were low and sweet, but the tunes he played were so disguised and overloaded with variations, as with me to lose much of their melody.

From these gentlemen of the army, I pass to one of the navy, rude and boisterous as the element to which he belonged. His name I think was Wallace, the commander of a ship of war on the American station, and full fraught, perhaps, with the ill humour of the mother country towards her colonies, which she was already beginning to goad to independence. His character upon the coast was that of being insolent and brutal beyond his peers; and his deportment as a lodger was altogether of a piece with it. Being asked by my mother, who, by the desire of the gentlemen, was in the custom of taking the head of her table, if he would be helped to a dish that was near her, "Damme, madam," replied the ruffian, "it is to be supposed that at a public table every man has a right to help himself, and this I mean to do." With a tear in her eye, she besought him to pardon her, assuring him, that, in future, he should not be offended by her officiousness.

At another time, when Joseph Church of Bristol, who has already been mentioned as a friend of the family, was in town and at our house, which, in his visits to the city, he always made his home, my mother mentioned to the gentlemen, who were about sitting down

to supper, but three or four in number, of whom Captain Wallace was one, that there was a friend of hers in the house, a very honest, plain man, of the society of Friends, and begged to know if it would be agreeable to them that he should be brought into supper. They all readily assented, and none with more alacrity than Wallace. Accordingly Mr Church was introduced, and sat down. During supper, the captain directed his chief discourse to him, interlarded with a deal of very coarse and insolent raillery on his broad brim, &c. Church bore it all very patiently until after supper, when he at length ventured to say—"Captain, thou hast made very free with me, and asked me a great many questions, which I have endeavoured to answer to thy satisfaction: Wilt thou now permit me to ask thee one in my turn?"—"Oh by all means," exclaimed the captain, "any thing that you please, friend—what is it?"—"Why then, I wish to be informed, what makes thee drink so often; art thou really dry every time thou carriest the liquor to thy mouth?" This was a home thrust at the seaman, whose frequent potations had already produced a degree of intoxication. At once, forgetting the liberties he had taken, and the promise he had given of equal freedom in return, he broke out into a violent rage, venting himself in the most indecent and illiberal language, and vociferating, with an unlucky logic which recoiled upon himself —"What! do you think I am like a hog, only to drink when I am dry?" But matters had gone too far for a reply, and the object of his wrath very prudently left the table and the room as expeditiously as possible. It cannot be denied, that there was some provocation in the question proposed; but he knows little of the Quaker character, who does not know, that the non-resisting

tenet does not prohibit the use of dry sarcasm, which here was unquestionably in its place.

It would be easy to extend these biographical details; but my materials, at best, are too deficient in interest to warrant much presumption on the patience of the reader: I shall therefore only add to the list the names of Hancock and Washington, each of whom had at different times sojourned at our caravansary.

Yet another, of some eminence, though not exactly in the same kind, whom I ought not to omit, was Rivington the printer, of New York. This gentleman's manners and appearance were sufficiently dignified, and he kept the best company. He was an everlasting dabbler in theatrical heroics. Othello was the character in which he liked best to appear; and converting his auditory into the "Most potent, grave, and reverend signiors" of Venice, he would deliver his unvarnished tale:

"Her father lov'd me, oft invited me," &c.

With the same magic by which the listening gentlemen were turned into senators, my mother was transformed into Desdemona; and from the frequent spoutings of Rivington, the officers of the 42d regiment, and others, who were then in the house, became familiarized to the appellation, and appropriated it. Thus, Desdemona, or rather Desdy, for shortness, was the name she generally afterwards went by among that set of lodgers; and I recollect the concluding line of a poetical effusion of Lieutenant Rumsey of the 42d, on occasion of some trifling *fracas*, to have been—

For Desdy, believe me, you don't become airs!

In the daily intercourse with her boarders which my

mother's custom of sitting at the head of her table induced, such familiarities might be excused. They were only to be repelled, at least, by a formal austerity of manner, which was neither natural to her, nor for her interest to assume. The cause of umbrage was a midnight riot, perpetrated by Rumsey, Rivington, and Dr Kearsley, in which the Doctor, mounted on horseback, rode into the back parlour, and even up stairs, to the great disturbance and terror of the family; for, as it may well be supposed, there was a direful clatter. *Quadrupedante sonitu quatit ungula* domum.

CHAPTER III.

The Author mixes in new Society—Is destined for the Law —Philadelphian Theatricals—Anecdote—Debating Society —Causes of Youthful Follies—Junius's Letters.

About the year 1769 or 1770, my grandfather died. My inattention to dates disqualifies me for fixing the year, nor is it material. His disorder was a complication of dropsy and asthma. I well remember being with him a few evenings before his death, and seldom saw him in better spirits. He was anticipating my future consequence in life; and, as like too many others, I was destined in vain,

D'une robe à longs plis balayer le barreau—
To sweep, with full sleev'd robe, the dusty bar.*

He was making himself merry with the fancy of my strutting with my full-bottomed periwig and small-sword, the costume he attached to a *bannister* of law, as he was pleased to term what in England is called a barrister. But it will be recollected, that I have already said the old gentleman was a German, no great adept in English, and let me add, no great scholar in any language; although his manners were those of a man of the world,

* This quotation would apply better, or at least more literally, if gowns had been worn at our bar.

and a frequenter of good company, somewhat blunt, however, and occasionally facetious. The story of the toper and flies, worked up into an ode by Peter Pindar, I have more than once heard related of him. The scene was laid in Philadelphia, where, being at a friend's house to dine, and asked to take some punch before dinner, he found several flies in the bowl. He removed them with a spoon, took his drink, and with great deliberation was proceeding to replace them. "Why, what are you doing, Mr Marks," * exclaimed the entertainer, "putting flies into the bowl?"—"Why, *I* don't like them," said he, "but I did not know but you might,"—his mode of suggesting that the bowl should have been covered: for decanters and tumblers, be it observed, are a modern refinement in the apparatus of punch-drinking. Whether the story really originated with my grandfather, and travelled from the continent to the islands, where Dr Wolcott picked it up; or whether the humour was of insular origin, and merely borrowed and vamped up by my grandfather, I pretend not to decide; but certain it is, that he had the credit of it in Philadelphia, many years before the works of Peter Pindar appeared.

If want of occupation, as we are told, is the root of all evil, my youth was exposed to very great dangers. The interval between my leaving the academy, and being put to the study of the law at about the age of sixteen, was not less than eighteen months; an invaluable period, lost in idleness and unprofitable amusement. It had the effect to estrange me for a time from my school-companions, and, in their stead, to bring me acquainted

* Joseph Marks; the name might have been mentioned before.

with a set of young men, whose education and habits had been wholly different from my own. They were chiefly designed for the sea, or engaged in the less humiliating mechanical employments; and were but the more to my taste for affecting a sort of rough independence of manners, which appeared to me manly. They were not, however, worthless; and such of them as were destined to become men and citizens have, with few exceptions, filled their parts in society with reputation and respectability. As I had now attained that stage in the progress of the mind, in which

> Neglected Tray and Pointer lie,
> And covies unmolested fly,

the void was supplied by an introduction into the fair society, with which these young men were in the habit of associating. It consisted generally of Quakers; and there was a witching one among them, with whom, at a first interview in a party on the water, I became so violently enamoured, as to have been up, perhaps, to the part of a Romeo or a Pyramus, had the requisite train of untoward circumstances ensued. But as there were no feuds between our houses, nor unnatural parents to "forbid what they could not prohibit," the matter in due time passed off without any dolorous catastrophe. Nor was it long before I was translated into a new set of female acquaintance, in which I found new objects to sigh for. Such, indeed, I was seldom, if ever, without, during the rest of my nonage; and with as little reason, perhaps, as any one, to complain of adverse stars. Nevertheless, I should hesitate in pronouncing this season of life happy. If its enjoyments are great, so are its solicitudes; and although it should escape the pangs of

"slighted vows and cold disdain," it yet is racked by a host of inquietudes, doubt, distrust, jealousy, hope deferred by the frustration of promised interviews, and wishes sickening under the weight of obstacles too mighty to be surmounted. In the language of the medical poet,

> The wholesome appetites and powers of life
> Dissolve in languor. Your cheerful days are gone;
> The generous bloom that flush'd your cheeks is fled.
> To sighs devoted and to tender pains,
> Pensive you sit, or solitary stray,
> And waste your youth in musing.

But the peril of fine eyes was not the only one which beset me. During my residence in the Slate-house, I had contracted an intimacy with the second son of Dr Thomas Bond, who lived next door; a connection which continued for several years. He was perhaps a year older than myself, and had, in like manner, abandoned his studies, and prematurely bidden adieu to the College of Princeton. Handsome in his person, in his manner confident and assured, he had the most lordly contempt for the opinion of the world, that is the sober world, of any young man I have known; as well as a precocity in fashionable vices, equalled by few, and certainly exceeded by none. Admiring his talents and accomplishments, I willingly yielded him the lead in our amusements, happy in emulating his *degagée* air and rakish appearance. He it was who first introduced me to the fascination of a billiard-table, and initiated me into the other seductive arcana of city dissipation. He also showed me where beardless youth might find a Lethe for its timidity, in the form of an execrable potion called wine, on the very moderate terms of two and sixpence a quart. At an obscure inn in Race Street, dropping in about dark, we were led by a steep and narrow

stair-case to a chamber in the third story, so lumbered with beds as scarcely to leave room for a table and one chair, the beds superseding the necessity of more. Here we poured down the fiery beverage; and valiant in the novel feeling of intoxication, sallied forth in quest of adventures. Under the auspices of such a leader, I could not fail to improve; nor was his progress less promoted by so able a second. In a word, we aspired to be rakes, and were gratified. Mr Richard Bond was the favourite of his father, studied physic under him, and, notwithstanding his addiction to pleasure, would probably have made a respectable figure in his profession: for he had genius, no fondness for liquor, no unusual want of application to business, and vanity, perhaps, more than real propensity, had prompted his juvenile excesses. But he was destined to finish his career at an early age, by that fatal disease to youth, a pulmonary consumption. He had a presentiment of this, and frequently said when in health, it would be his mortal distemper. Yet his frame seemed not to indicate it: he had a prominent chest, with a habit inclined to fulness. Our intimacy had ceased for some time before his death: I know not why, unless he had been alienated by a latent spark of jealousy, in relation to a young lady, for whom we both had a partiality; mine, indeed, slight and evanescent; his deep and more lasting, and which, I have understood, only ended with his life.

As it was necessary I should be employed, the choice of a vocation for me had for some time engaged the attention of my near connections. The question was, whether I should be a merchant, a physician, or a lawyer. My inclinations were duly consulted. I had no predilection for either, though I liked the law the least of

the three, being sensible that my talents were not of the cast which would enable me to succeed in that profession. I searched my composition in vain for the materials that would be required. If they were there, the want of fortitude to bring them forth would be the same as if they were not; and this seemed a deficiency I could never supply. To rise at the bar with due gravity and recollection; to challenge the attention of the court, the jury, and the bystanders; to confide in my ability to do justice to a good cause; to colour a bad one by the requisite artifice and simulation; and to undertake to entertain by my rhetoric, where I must necessarily fail to convince by my logic, I felt to be a task far beyond my strength; and I shuddered at it, in idea only, even in my most sanguine, self-complacent moments. To what this infirmity, inaccurately termed diffidence, is owing, or whether it be a defect in the mental or bodily powers, is not, I believe, ascertained; yet it exists to a degree scarcely superable in some, while, in others, it is a sensation almost unknown. It appears, however, to be considerably under the influence of education, since, if felt at all, it never shows itself in a thorough-bred Quaker: neither do we suppose it to exist in a Frenchman, though the phrase *mauvaise honte* is a proof that the imbecility has been recognised by the nation; a circumstance we might be led to doubt, too, from the account given by Dr Moore of the National Assembly. He tells us, that, of the great number of members of which it was composed, there appeared to be none who could not express themselves with perfect freedom and ease; and that there seemed to be a continual competition for the possession of the tribune. How different, he observes, from an assembly of Englishmen! I

might add, of Americans! But that the feeling is natural, if, indeed, there could be a doubt of it; that it was known to the ancients, and that it is not merely an effect of modern manners, is evinced from the following lines of Petronius on *Dreams*, in which the trepidation is not only recognised, but very strongly depicted.

> Qui causas orare solent, legesque forumque
> Et pavido cernunt inclusum corde tribunal.

I have said it is inaccurately termed diffidence; it rather appears to me to proceed from too much pride and self-attention, a kind of morbid sensibility, ever making *self* the principal figure in the scene, and overweeningly solicitous for the respect of the audience; dreading, in equal degree, its contempt and the humiliation of a failure. Hence, as one that is too fearful of falling will never excel in the hazardous exercises, such as riding and skating, so the destined public speaker, who will not risk a fall, can never expect to succeed. If he is too fastidious to submit to occasional humiliation, he must undergo the perpetual one of being really, as well as reputedly, unqualified for his profession. Some diffidence or distrust of our powers does, no doubt, attend the species of *mauvaise honte* we are speaking of; but it is more often, I believe, the distrust of being able to display the talents we possess, or at least ascribe to ourselves, than an underrating of them; and appears to have its primary cause, as already said, in a temperament of too much susceptibility to shame,—and if so, the French have given it a very proper appellation.

But notwithstanding my conviction of an inaptitude for the bar, it was, however, the profession assigned me. I had declared for the study of physic, and overtures had

accordingly been made to a practitioner of eminence, but he happening at the time to have as many students as he wanted, declined taking another. Failing here, it was deemed inexpedient any longer to defer placing me somewhere. I had certainly been already too long unemployed; and my uncle, (the executor of my father's will, in conjunction with my mother,) who had all along been desirous that I should go to the bar, his own profession, again recommended it; and proposed taking me into his own family, where, by his assistance, the use of his library, which was a very ample one, and an occasional attention to the business of his office, that of Prothonotary of the Common Pleas, which he held as deputy of the late Governor Hamilton, then residing at Bushhill, I had the means of acquiring a knowledge of the law, both as to principle and practice; and the proposal being, in many respects, eligible and agreeable, was embraced. I was sensible that it was no less to my advantage than reputation, that I should be doing something: There was no one with whom, in the character of a master, I could expect to be more pleasantly situated than with my uncle, who was a man of unbounded benevolence and liberality; and my imagination went to castle-building in the remote prospect of a trip to England, for the purpose of completing my education at the Temple; for, whatever may be the case now, this was the grand desideratum, or *summum bonum*, with the aspiring law-youth of my day. As to the sober part of the calculation, whether the occupation I was about to embrace was adapted to my talents, would command my application, and be likely to afford me the means of future subsistence, it was put aside for the more immediately grateful considerations already mentioned. I cannot

venture to pronounce, however, that the medical profession would have suited me much better. In truth, I was indolent to a great degree; and with respect to that heroic fortitude which subdues the mind to its purposes, withdraws it at will from the flowery paths of pleasure, and forces it into the thorny road of utility, the distinguishing trait in the character of Cæsar, and which justifies the poet in designating him as "the world's great master, and *his own*," I have very little to boast of. I was ever too easily seduced by the charm of present gratification, and my general mood in youth was an entire apathy to gainful views. With the strongest inclination to be respectable in life, and even with ambition to aspire to the first rank in my profession, I yet felt an invincible incapacity for mingling in the world of business, the only means by which my desire could be gratified. My imagination, almost ever in a state of listless, amorous delirium,

> Where honour still,
> And great design, against the oppressive load,
> By fits, impatient heaved,

could rarely be brought down to the key of sober occupation, or attuned to the flat *fasque nefasque* of the sages of the law; and my acquaintance with them was, of course, a very slight one. Were we justified in laying our unthriftiness on nature, I might say, that she never intended me for a man of business. If she has denied me the qualifications of an advocate, she has not certainly been more liberal to me of those of a trafficker; for whether it be owing to pride, to dulness, to laziness, or to impatience, I could never excel in driving a bargain: And as to that spirit of commercial enterprise or

speculation, which only asks the use of money to increase it, I never possessed a spark of it; and, consequently, though I have sometimes had cash to spare, it rarely, if ever, was employed; for the very good reason, that commodities in my hands always turned out to be drugs. In thus characterising myself, I affect not singularity: For the discomfort of my declining age, I but depict myself too truly.

A short time before the epoch of my becoming a student of law, the city was visited by the company of players, since styling themselves, The Old American Company. They had for several years been exhibiting in the islands, and now returned to the continent in the view of dividing their time and labours between Philadelphia and New York. At Boston,

> they did not appear,
> So peevish was the edict of the May'r,

or, at least, of those authorities which were charged with the custody of the public morals. The manager was Douglas, rather a decent than shining actor,—a man of sense and discretion, married to the Widow Hallam, whose son Lewis, then in full culmination, was the Roscius of the theatre. As the dramatic heroes were all *his* without a competitor, so the heroines were the exclusive property of Miss Cheer, who was deemed an admirable performer. The singing department was supplied and supported by the voices of Wools and Miss Wainwright, said to have been pupils of Dr Arne; while, in the tremulous drawl of the old man, in low jest and buffoonery, Morris, thence the minion of the gallery, stood first and unrivalled. As for the Tomlinsons, the Walls, the Allens, &c. they were your Bonifaces, your Jessamys,

your Mock Doctors, and what not. On the female side, Mrs Douglas was a respectable matron-like dame, stately or querulous as occasion required,—a very good Gertrude,—a truly appropriate Lady Randolph, with her white handkerchief and her weeds; but then, to applaud, it was absolutely necessary to forget, that, to touch the heart of the spectator, had any relation to her function. Mrs Harman bore away the palm as a duenna, and Miss Wainwright as a chambermaid. Although these were among the principal performers at first, the company was from time to time essentially improved by additions. Among these, the Miss Storers, Miss Hallam, and Mr Henry, were valuable acquisitions; as was also a Mr Goodman, who had read law in Philadelphia with Mr Ross. This topic may be disgusting to persons of gravity; but human manners are my theme, as well in youth as in age. Each period has its play-things; and if the strollers of Thespis have not been thought beneath the dignity of Grecian history, this notice of the old American stagers may be granted to the levity of memoirs.

Whether there may be any room for comparison between these, the old American company, and the performers of the present day, I venture not to say. Nothing is more subject to fashion than the style of public exhibitions; and as the excellence of the Lacedemonian black broth essentially depended, we are told, on the appetite of the feeder, so, no doubt, does the merit of theatrical entertainments. I cannot but say, however, that, in my opinion, the old company acquitted themselves with most animation and glee; they were a passable set of comedians. Hallam had merit in a number of characters, and was always a pleasing performer. No

one could tread the stage with more ease. Upon it, indeed, he might be said to have been cradled, and wheeled in his go-cart. In tragedy, it cannot be denied, that his declamation was either mouthing or ranting; yet a thorough master of all the tricks and finesse of his trade, his manner was both graceful and impressive—"Tears in his eyes, distraction in his aspect, a broken voice, and his whole function suiting with forms to his conceit."—He once ventured to appear in Hamlet either at Drury Lane or Covent Garden, and was endured. In the account given of his performance, he is said not to have been to the taste of a London audience, though he is admitted to be a man of a pleasing and interesting address. He was, however, at Philadelphia, as much the soul of the Southwark theatre as ever Garrick was of Drury Lane; and if, as Dr Johnson allows, popularity in matters of taste is unquestionable evidence of merit, we cannot withhold a considerable portion of it from Mr Hallam, notwithstanding his faults.

The subject of this old company opens the door to a trifling anecdote of a very early origin. Over their stage, in imitation of the sons of *Drury*, they had fixed the motto of *Totus mundus agit histrionem*—The whole world act the player. Some young ladies one evening, among whom was one of my aunts, applied to the gentleman who attended them for the meaning of the words. Willing to pass himself off for a scholar, and taking for his clew, probably, the word *mundus*, he boldly interpreted them into—"We act Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays,"—and the ladies were satisfied. But, to the lasting disquiet of the unlucky beau, they were not long after undeceived by some of their more learned acquaintance.

Although the theatre must be admitted to be a stimulus to those vices, which something inherent in our nature renders essential to the favoured hero of the comic drama and the novel, it was yet useful to me in one respect. It induced me to open books which had hitherto lain neglected on the shelf. A little Latin, and but a little, was the chief fruit of my education. I was tolerably instructed in the rudiments of grammar, but in nothing else. I wrote a very indifferent hand, and spelled still worse than I wrote. I knew little or nothing of arithmetic; that, as a branch of the mathematics, being taught in the academy after the languages. But now I became a reader of plays, and particularly of those of Shakespeare, of which I was an ardent and unaffected admirer. From these I passed to those of Otway and Rowe, and the other writers of tragedy, and thence to the English poets of every description. Poetry, indeed, has continued to be my favourite reading; and, when I feel disposed to read aloud, it is always my choice. From being wholly unapprised of the structure of the sentences, and the place of the pauses in prose, the reading of it requires much greater attention to the management of the breath; and is therefore to me much the most difficult and laborious. Nor has my bias for metrical compositions been confined to the English authors. A small knowledge of French has enabled me to make acquaintance with the HENRIADE of Voltaire, the poems of Boileau, and those of some other writers; and that it has not been more general, has principally been owing to want of books. Nevertheless, I cannot but subscribe to the decree of the English critics, that the French is not the language of the Muses, at least in their sublimer moods. What, for instance, can be more completely un-

harmonious and halting than these lines in the Henriade, which appear to have been considerably laboured to the end of producing a grand effect?

> On entendoit gronder ces bombes effroyables,
> De troubles de la Flandre enfants abominables,
> Le salpêtre enfoncé dans ces globes d'arain,
> Part, s'echauffe, s'embrase, et s'ecarte soudain:

"Cannons and kettle-drums—sweet numbers these."—The term *saltpetre*, though, no doubt, susceptible of elegance in French poetry, since it is used by one of its greatest masters, would, in ours, set all collocation at defiance; and could appear in no other metre than doggerel. Observations, however, of this kind should not be dogmatically urged, since, how far our taste for melody may be natural or artificial is not easy to ascertain. But certainly the music of French numbers is extremely flat and monotonous to an English ear, though, to a French one, our best-sounding measure may be sing-song no less vapid.

In the Latin classics, too, I have been a dipper; and the best of my progress in that language is to be ascribed to my fondness for its poetry. Why was I not, when at school, imbued with the same relish? I might then have been a scholar, and the whole body of Roman poetry, the *Corpus omnium veterum Poetarum Latinorum*, (a huge unwieldy tome, which had belonged to my father,) in a chronological series from Andronicus and Ennius to Maurus Terentianus, might have been at my finger-ends; whereas, now, only scraps of it are occasionally elicited with difficulty, either when disposed to learn upon what subjects it was that Lucretius, Catullus, Tibullus, Propertius, Lucanus, Statius, &c. &c. had respectively employed their pens; or when I would follow Mr Gibbon,

in his references to the poets of later times, the Calphurnius's, the Nemesianus's, the Claudianus's, the Prudentius's, and Sidonius's. Still, according to my manner, this was but a species of amusement, the *dulce*, without a particle of the *utile*, to me who had no manner of concern with the decline of the Roman empire, or the songsters which belonged to it. It was not, however, Latin, but English poetry, which first led me astray. I did not, it is true, *pen stanzas*, but I often read them when I should have *engrossed;* I had, as Junius says of Sir William Draper, "The melancholy madness of poetry, without the inspiration."

The only project I embraced, which promised advantage to me in my profession, or indicated a serious design to pursue it, was my joining a society of young men, instituted for the purpose of disputing on given subjects, as well as of reciting passages from the English classics. It chiefly consisted of law students, though there were some among us who were designed for the pulpit; and the members were generally such as had obtained degrees in the seminaries either of Princeton or Philadelphia. The first question in which I was appointed to take a part was that very hackneyed one, "Whether a public or a private education is to be preferred." There were two on each side; and our reasonings were reduced to writing, and read in full assembly, where the president *pro tempore* made his decision. I soon discovered that the arguments I had to reply to, though proceeding from one of high reputation for scholarship, had been borrowed almost word for word from Rollin's Belles-lettres. Restrained by delicacy from exposing the plagiarism, I answered them as well as I could from my own resources, and had some allowances made me,

since it had become pretty well known that Rollin was my real antagonist. In fact, my opponent would hardly have ventured to put himself so much in my power by stealing from so common a book, had he not calculated pretty largely on my unacquaintance with any books. It next fell to me to propound a question; and having not long before met with one in a magazine which was suggested as a curious subject of investigation, I submitted it to the assembly. It was, "Whether there be most pleasure in the reception or communication of knowledge." As proposer of the question I had the choice of my side, as well as the conclusion of the argument; and I declared for the "communication." As this was a subject on which school-books gave no light, the disputants had to draw solely from their own funds; and in some there was a considerable falling off. To me the topic was as new as to any of them; but my production had the good fortune to be approved, and to aid in obtaining the decision of the president. But I soon became weary of this scholastic employment. It appeared to me both puerile and pedantic; and the formality of addressing the chair with the feigned gravity of a pleader, required a kind of grimace I felt myself awkward at. Indeed, the two orations I had written, like that of Cicero for Milo, were not delivered by their author, who did not appear; but they were read for me by my friend and fellow student Andrew Robeson. I once, however, with this same gentleman, risked my declaiming powers in a scene of *Venice Preserved*; but in what character I appeared I do not remember.

I also involved myself about this period in metaphysical subtleties; and with Mr James Hutchinson, the late

Dr Hutchinson, who then lived with Bartram the apothecary, and with whom I had become intimate, I frequently reasoned upon fate, "fixed fate, free-will, foreknowledge absolute," &c. Our acquaintance found cement in the circumstances of our both being Bucks county men, and exactly of an age. The Doctor's father, Randal Hutchinson, a Quaker, did the masonwork of my father's house at Fairview; and, agreeably to the custom in the country, resided with him while employed in it. From family tradition, for I do not remember old Randal, he was what might be called a *queer put*. Being once called upon for his song, on occasion of a little merriment, he declined it with the dry remark, that he could do his own singing: and so indeed it appeared, as he was in the habit, every evening after work, of singing out in rustic drone to his hands assembled round him, a celebrated political poem of that time, entitled *The Washing of the Blackmoor White*. It was levelled, if I do not mistake, at the aristocracy of the day; and if so, the Doctor had a sort of hereditary right to that zeal against the WELL BORN of his own, which has rendered his name a favourite signature with democratic essayists. But for all this, he was a friendly man, and no foe to good company; and as to political propensities, they seem, in some men, to be inherent instincts, wholly independent of the reasoning faculty, and no more to be resisted than a constitutional tendency to be fat or lean: a sort of restless spirits these, prone to act, to confederate, and intrigue; and who, though not absolutely bad at heart, have yet a lamentable itch for mischief. If there are such men, my quondam friend was one of them.

The old and the austere may declaim as they will

against the follies and vices of youth, the natural propensities will still prevail; and for one student of law that is restrained by the solid eloquence of Professor Blackstone from "whiling away the awkward interval from childhood to twenty-one," two or three perhaps are led astray by the seducing rake of Dr Hoadley. Ranger, returning to the temple in a disordered dress, after a night of riot and debauchery, has, unfortunately, more allurements for a young man of metal, and still more unfortunately for the generality of young ladies, to whom it is his first desire to be agreeable, than the sober, orderly student, pale with the incipient *lucubrations of twenty years.* I will not undertake to say, that authors are right in exhibiting such characters as a Dorimant, a Jones, a Pickle, a Ranger, or a Charles Surface, but in so doing they draw from nature, and address themselves to the taste of their readers. Has ever novel or comedy been popular, whose hero is a man of strict morality and virtue? The Grandison of Richardson, the Bevil of Steel, and Henry of Cumberland, are but insipid characters in the eyes of those who are customers for the productions of the novelist and dramatist. Happy, indeed, are they, who, without being lost to the feelings of youth, can yet indulge them with discretion and moderation; and who do not forget, that, although the fashionable gaieties may for a time recommend them to the thoughtless of both sexes, it is application to business that must provide the means of ease, contentment, and respectability in life. Such was not my case. I wanted strength of mind for the judgment of Hercules, and was for seizing the present moment with Horace. I might not live to be old, and if I did, what were its dull satisfactions in comparison of the vivid, enthusiastic enjoyments of youth? In this

temper I plunged deep into dissipation, with the exception of gaming, having never found much attraction in the fortuitous evolutions of a shuffled pack of cards, or a shaken dice-box. But the pleasures of the table, the independence of tavern revelry, and its high-minded contempt of the plodding and industrious, were irresistibly fascinating to me. Though without the slightest addiction to liquor, nothing was more delightful to me than to find myself a member of a large bottle association set in for serious drinking; the table officers appointed, the demi-johns filled, the bottles arranged, with the other necessary dispositions for such engagements; and I put no inconsiderable value upon myself for my supposed "potency in potting," or, in modern phrase, my being able to carry off a respectable quantity of wine. Although a grievous headach was the usual penalty of my debauch, the admonition vanished with the indisposition, while a play, or some other frivolous reading, beguiled the hours of penance. I blush to think of the many excesses I was guilty of while involved in this vortex of intemperance. Wine rarely deprived me of my feet, but it sometimes inflamed me to madness; and, in the true spirit of chivalry, the more extravagant an enterprise, the greater was the temptation to achieve it. Every occupation requires its peculiar talents, and where mischief is the object, the spirit of noble daring is certainly an accomplishment. Hence my energy on these occasions was duly appreciated by my companions. As to those convivial qualifications, which are *wont to set the table in a roar*, I had never any pretensions to them, though few enjoyed them with more relish. But these talents are often fatal to the possessor, and they hastened, if they did not induce, the catastrophe of poor Kinnersley, a son of the already men-

tioned teacher at the academy. As he was several years older than myself, he belonged to an elder class in the school of riot; yet I have sometimes fallen in with him. He had not, indeed, the gibes and flashes of merriment which are attributed to *the jester of Howrendilius's court;* but of all men I have seen, he had the happiest knack of being gross without being disgusting, and, consequently, of entertaining a company sunk below the point of Attic refinement. Modest by nature, and unobtrusive, probably from a conviction that he thereby gave zest to his talent, he always suffered himself to be called upon for his song, which he then generally accompanied with his violin, to the exquisite delight of his hearers. He possessed humour without grimace or buffoonery; and in the character of the drunken man, which he put on in some of his songs, and which may be endured as an imitation, he was pronounced by Hallam to be unequalled. But, unfortunately, the character became at length too much a real one; and it is to be lamented, that one whose exterior indicated a most ingenuous disposition, should prematurely close his career by habitual intemperance.

The study of the law, as may be supposed, went on heavily during this round of dissipation. I occasionally looked into Blackstone, but carefully kept aloof from the courts, where my attendance, as a future candidate for the bar, was not to be dispensed with. Light reading was the day's amusement; and, as already said, it chiefly consisted of poetry and plays. The novels of Fielding and Smollet I had read; but as for those of Richardson, I had some how taken up the idea, that they were formal stuff, consisting chiefly of the dull ceremonials relating to courtship and marriage, with which superannuated aunts and grandmothers torment the young

misses subjected to their control. But, taking up one evening the last volume of Clarissa, I accidentally opened it at a letter relating to the duel between Lovelace and Morden. This arrested my attention, and I soon found that the concerns of men, not less than those of the other sex, were both understood and spiritedly represented by the author. I immediately procured the work, and read it with more interest than any tale had ever excited in me before. The cruel, unmerited misfortunes of Clarissa often steeped me in tears; yet the unrelenting villany of her betrayer was so relieved by great qualities, so entirely was he the gentleman when he chose to put it on, that the feeling of detestation was intermingled with admiration and respect; and had figure, rank, fortune, borne me out in the resemblance, his, of all the characters I had met with, would, in the vanity of my heart, have most prompted me to an imitation, though abhorring as much as any one his vile plotting and obduracy. Like the young man mentioned in the Letters of Lord Chesterfield, I almost aspired to the catastrophe, as well as the accomplishments of this *libertine destroyed.* Nor was I singular in this ambition: Lovelace has formed libertines, as Macheath has formed highwaymen. A young American, when at the temple, between forty and fifty years ago, played the part of the former with too fatal success, of which, I have been told, he preserved, and sometimes showed the story, written by himself: and that this character was the model which the young Lord Lyttleton prescribed to himself, appears to me evident from the cast of some of his letters. Rowe's Lothario, which Dr Johnson tells us is the outline of Lovelace, is ever more favoured by an audience than the virtuous and injured Altamont,

whom even the circumspect Mr Cumberland brands with the epithet of *wittol*. And is there a young and giddy female heart, that does not beat in unison with Calista's when she exclaims—

> I swear I could not see the dear betrayer
> Kneel at my feet, and sigh to be forgiven,
> But my relenting heart would pardon all,
> And quite forget 'twas he that had undone me?

Richardson, it is true, could not have made his story either natural or interesting without ascribing great qualities to Lovelace. So refined and all accomplished a woman as Clarissa was not to be taken with an ordinary man; yet what shall we say of the instruction intended to be conveyed by the exhibition of such a character! Villain as he is, I very much fear, that, to the youth of both sexes, he is, upon the whole, more admired than detested. The probability therefore is, that, after all our attempts at advice and reformation, the world will proceed according to its original impulse, and that each season of life will retain the propensities adapted to its destination.

He who presumes to face the world in the character of his own biographer, ought to be armed with resolution for the encounter of great difficulties. To expose his follies, though but his very early ones, is far from a pleasant task; and yet it is, in some degree, imposed upon him by the obligation he is under to represent himself truly. To do it lightly, as I have done, may argue, with some, too much indulgence for vice; and to treat the matter as a subject for deep humiliation and contrition, would be to assume an austerity, I must confess I do not harbour. Still I can say, with truth, that

the delineation is painful, and that I feel it to require an apology on the score of decorum.

It was about this time that the Letters of Junius appeared, and from the English Gazettes found their way into ours. The celebrity of these philippics excited general attention, and, of course, mine; but the mere fashion of admiring them would never have prevailed over my indifference to their subject-matter to induce me to read them, had they not possessed a charm unusual in such performances. I sought them with avidity, and read them with delight. Some diversity of opinion still exists with respect to their style. Cumberland gives us to understand, that he sees little to admire in them; Johnson, however, seems to have thought differently; and their continued popularity must be considered as something more than equivocal evidence of their merit. Mr Heron conceives their author, whoever he was, to have formed his style, in a great measure, on Chillingworth, Swift, Bolingbroke, and Shebbeare. I am unacquainted with the writings of Chillingworth, nor do I discern in Junius any great likeness to Swift; but there is certainly a striking resemblance in his manner to *The Dedication to a Noble Lord*, prefixed to the remarks on the History of England by Bolingbroke, and also to Angeloni's Letters by Dr Shebbeare, which, when I read them many years ago, appeared to me to be written with uncommon spirit, elegance, and force. But if Junius formed his style upon these distinguished writers, he sometimes drew his observations from those who are nearly obsolete. In his fifteenth letter, which is addressed to the Duke of Grafton, there is an allusion to a sentiment in *Bacon's Advancement of Learning*, of which Mr Heron does not

seem to have been aware. "Yet, for the benefit of the succeeding age," says Junius, in his concluding sentence, "I could wish that your retreat might be deferred until your morals shall happily be ripened to that maturity of corruption at which the worst examples cease to be contagious." Bacon has it, that "men o'erspread with vice, do not so much corrupt public manners, as those that are half evil, and in part only." *Putredo serpens majis contagiosa est quam natura.* I think, in some of the early editions of this letter, the words "as philosophers tell us," were inserted between the words "which" and "the," reading thus—"at which, as philosophers tell us, the worst examples cease to be contagious."

Were it warrantable to infer an imitation from a similitude in a single point, Mr Heron might go back to the Latin classics, and add the names of Horace, Juvenal, and Petronius, to those of the English writers, whom Junius is supposed to have studied and to have had in his eye. That abrupt and indignant use of the imperative mood, so frequent in him, is also to be met with in each of these Latin authors. "Content yourself, my lord, with the many advantages," &c.—"Avail yourself of all the unforgiving piety," &c.—"Return, my lord, before it be too late," &c.—"Take back your mistress."—"Indulge the people. Attend Newmarket," &c.—"Now let him go back to his cloister," &c. Thus Horace—*I nunc, argentum et marmor vetus, &c.—I nunc et versus tecum meditare canoros:* and Juvenal, speaking of Hannibal, *I clemens, et sævos curre per Alpes;*—and in the eloquent reflections over the body of Lycas in Petronius, the speaker exclaims, "*Ite nunc mortales, et magnis cogitationibus pectora implete.*

Ita cauti, et opes fraudibus captas per mille annos, disponite." But whether Junius had models or not, he probably surpassed all who went before him in the graces of diction. He appears to have imparted an unknown music to English prose, and to have given it a fascination, in no wise inferior to the language of Rousseau. The beginning of his sentences are no less harmonious than his cadences at their close; nor, to my ear, can any lines in poetry, taking the preceding passage along with them, flow with more sweetness and ease than do the following, in one of the letters to the Duke of Grafton. "You had already taken your degrees with credit in those schools, in which the English nobility are formed to virtue," &c. as do also the four concluding periods of the letter containing the remarked sentiment from Lord Bacon. I am aware it may be thought, that too much stress is here laid on mere sound; but if we analyze the sources from which our relish of good composition is derived, we shall be compelled to acknowledge the great importance of the ear in the discernment of literary excellence. Cicero, as we are told by Lord Kaimes, I think, has even employed redundant words for the improvement of his harmony; and Rousseau informs us, that he has spent whole nights in constructing and rounding a period: Hence may be inferred the importance these great writers attached to this part of their art.

As it was highly fashionable at this time to speak of Junius, he is descanted upon in the letters of Tamoc Caspipina, which came out in Philadelphia in the year 1771. In these, he is *prettily* denominated *the knight of the polished armour*, a fancy with which the writer seems not a little pleased, since he has taken care that the

idea shall not be lost for want of repeating. These letters proceeded from the pen of the Reverend Mr Duche, a very popular preacher of the Episcopal denomination. He had a fine voice and graceful delivery, but was never rated high in point of ability. His sermons were deemed flowery and flimsy, like the letters of Caspipina.

Mr Duche was a Whig *before*, and I believe *after*, the declaration of independence; but being in Philadelphia when the British army took possession of it, and thinking, probably, that his country was in a fair way of being subdued, he changed sides, and wrote a very arrogant, ill-judged letter to General Washington, in which he advises him to renounce a cause which had very much degenerated, and to "negotiate for America at the head of his army." Mr Duche was weak and vain, yet probably not a bad man: His habits, at least, were pious; and, with the exception of this political tergiversation, his conduct exemplary. His whimsical signature of Tamoc Caspipina is an acrostic on his designation, as The Assistant Minister of Christ's Church and St Peter's, in Philadelphia, in North America.

CHAPTER IV.

The Author removes to Yorktown—Boarding-House, and Character of the Inmates—General Society—Returns to Philadelphia, and pursues his Legal Studies—Fencing—Anecdote of a Madman—Causes of the War with Britain—State of Parties—Preparation for War.

My irregular course of life had much impaired my health, for the re-establishment of which, and to enable me to pursue my studies without interruption from my free-living companions, my uncle advised my spending the approaching summer in Yorktown. Mr Samuel Johnson, the prothonotary of that county, was his particular friend, a respectable man who had been in the practice of the law, and had a very good library. Having been apprised of the project, he kindly offered me the use of his books, as well as his countenance and assistance in my reading. Accordingly, I submitted to become an exile from Philadelphia, with nearly the same objects and feelings of Propertius, when he left Rome for Athens.

> Magnum iter ad doctas proficisci cogor Athenas—
> Romanæ turres, et vos valeatis amici
> Qualiscunque mihi, tuque puella vale.

Not that York was an Athens; but I was sent thither for improvement, and there were various attractions in the city, from which it was no doubt prudent to withdraw me. It was in the spring of 1773 that I was transferred to this pleasant and flourishing village, situated about

C56855

twelve miles beyond the Susquehanna. It was this circumstance which rendered it an eligible retreat for congress in the year 1778, when General Howe was in possession of the capital and eastern parts of Pennsylvania. I was well received by Mr Johnson, but with that formal theoretical kind of politeness, which distinguishes the manners of those who constitute the *better sort* in small secluded towns: And if, in these days, the prothonotary of a county of German population was not confessedly the most considerable personage in it, he must have been egregiously wanting to himself. This could with no propriety be imputed to my patron. Although apparently a mild and modest man, he evidently knew his consequence, and never lost sight of it, though, to say the truth, I received full as much of his attention as either I desired or had a right to expect: He repeated the tender of his books and services, complimented me with a dinner, suggested that business and pleasure could not be well prosecuted together, and consigned me to my meditations.

I established myself at a boarding-house, at whose table I found a practising attorney, a student of law, another of physic, and a young Episcopal clergyman, who had lately arrived from Dublin. The first was a striking instance of what mere determination and perseverance will do, even in a learned profession. He was an Irishman, a man of middle age—the extent of whose attainments was certainly nothing more than in a coarse, vulgar hand, to draw a declaration; and in equally vulgar arithmetic, to sum up the interest due upon a bond. His figure was as awkward as can well be imagined, and his elocution exactly corresponded with it. From the humble post of under-sheriff, he had lately emerged to

his present station at the bar, and was already in good practice. By industry and economy, his acquisitions soon exceeded his expences; and he died not long since in pretty affluent circumstances. Justice, however, requires it should be added, that his want of brilliant qualities was compensated by an adequate portion of common sense, by unblemished integrity, and liberality in his dealings with the poor. Nor should it be forgotten, that, after having taken part with his adopted country in the struggle for her rights, he did not, like too many of his countrymen, by a blind obedience to vindictive passions, much more than efface the merit of his services.—The law-student was from Wilmington; an easy, good-natured, young man, whose talents appeared to be misplaced in their present direction. They were, probably, better adapted to the army, into which he entered on the breaking out of the war, and was killed at the battle of Brandywine, holding the rank of a major in the Pennsylvania line.—The student of physic, though with some rusticity to rub off, was yet a pretty good scholar; nor was he deficient in natural endowments. To these he added a manly and honourable way of thinking, which made him respectable in the army, (which he also afterwards joined,) as well as in the path of civil life, in which he possesses an honourable station in the western country.

The clergyman was only an occasional lodger; his pastoral duties often calling him to Maryland and elsewhere, which produced absences of several weeks at a time. He had probably the propensities of that species of gownman, which I have heard Whitefield call a *downy doctor;* as, whatever might have been his deportment on solemn occasions, in his intercourse with me, he did

not seem to be one who considered the enjoyment of the present sublunary scene by any means unworthy of regard. One day, as I was strumming a tune from the Beggar's Opera, upon a fiddle I had purchased, with a view of becoming a performer upon it, he entered my apartment. What, says he, you play upon the violin, and are at the airs of the Beggar's Opera! He immediately began to hum the tune I had before me, from which, turning over the leaves of the note-book, he passed on to others, which he sung as he went along, and evinced an acquaintance with the piece, much too intimate to have been acquired, by any thing short of an assiduous attendance on the theatre. After amusing himself and me for some time with his theatrical recollections, I am, said he, to give you a sermon next Sunday, and here it is, pulling from his pocket a manuscript. Perusing the title-page, he read, it was preached at such a time in such a place, and at another time in such a place, giving me to understand, from the dates, that it was not of his own composition, and that he made no difficulty of appropriating the productions of others. In a word, Mr L—— seemed in all respects to be what was then called, in Pennsylvania, a Maryland parson; that is, one who could accommodate himself to his company, and pass "from grave to gay, from lively to severe," as occasion might require. Among his other accomplishments, he was no incompetent jockey; at least, I have a right to infer so, from the result of an exchange of horses between us, a short time before my return to the city. I do not, however, insinuate that he took me in, but merely that he had the best of the bargain.

Besides my fellow-boarders there were several young men in the town, whose company served to relieve the

dreariness of my solitude; for such it was, compared with the scene from which I had removed. These, for the most part, are yet living, generally known and respected. There was also in the place an oddity, who, though not to be classed with its young men, I sometimes fell in with. This was Mr James Smith, the lawyer, then in considerable practice. He was, probably, between forty and fifty years of age, fond of his bottle and young company, and possessed of an original species of drollery. This, as may, perhaps, be said of all persons in his way, consisted more in the manner than the matter; for which reason it is scarcely possible to convey a just notion of it to the reader. In him it much depended on an uncouthness of gesture, a certain ludicrous cast of countenance, and a drawling mode of utterance, which, taken in conjunction with his eccentric ideas, produced an effect irresistibly comical; though, on an analysis, it would be difficult to decide whether the man or the saying most constituted the jest. The most trivial incident from his mouth was stamped with his originality, and in relating one evening how he had been disturbed in his office by a cow, he gave inconceivable zest to his narration, by his manner of telling how she thrust her nose into the door, and *there roared like a Numidian lion.* Like the picture of Garrick between Tragedy and Comedy, his phiz exhibited a struggle between tragedy and farce; in which the latter seemed on the eve of predominating. With a sufficiency of various reading to furnish him with materials for ridiculous allusions and incongruous combinations, he was never so successful as when he could find a learned pedant to play upon; and of all men, Judge Stedman, when mellow, was best calculated for his butt. The judge was a Scotchman, a man

of reading and erudition, though extremely magisterial and dogmatical in his cups. This it was which gave point to the humour of Smith, who, as if desirous of coming in for his share of the glory, while Stedman was in full display of his historical knowledge, never failed to set him raving by some monstrous anachronism, such, for instance, as "Don't you remember, Mr Stedman, that terrible bloody battle which Alexander the Great fought with the Russians, near the Straits of Babelmandel?"—"What, Sir!" said Stedman, repeating, with the most ineffable contempt, "which Alexander the Great fought with the Russians! Where, mon, did you get your chronology?"—"I think you will find it recorded, Mr Stedman, in Thucydides or Herodotus."—On another occasion, being asked for his authority for some enormous assertion, in which both space and time were fairly annihilated, with unshaken gravity, he replied, "I am pretty sure I have seen an account of it, Mr Stedman, in a High Dutch almanack, printed at *Aleepo*," his drawling way of pronouncing Aleppo. While every one at table was holding his sides at the expence of the Judge, he, on his part, had no doubt that Smith was the object of laughter, as he was of his own unutterable disdain. Thus every thing was as it should be, all parties were pleased; the laughers were highly tickled, the self-complacency of the real dupe was flattered, and the sarcastic vein of the pretended one gratified; and this, without the smallest suspicion on the part of Stedman, who, residing in Philadelphia, was ignorant of Smith's character, and destitute of penetration to develope it.

York, I must say, was somewhat obnoxious to the general charge of unsociableness, under which Pennsylva-

nia had always laboured; or, if I wrong her, I was not the kind of guest that was calculated to profit of her hospitality. Perhaps I approached her under unfavourable auspices, those of a young man debauched by evil communications; or, perhaps, there was a want of congeniality between her manners and mine. Be it as it may, there was but a single house in which I found that sort of reception which invited me to repeat my visit; and this was the house of a Jew. In this I could conceive myself at home, being always received with ease, with cheerfulness, and cordiality. Those who have known York, at the period I am speaking of, cannot fail to recollect the sprightly and engaging Mrs E., the life of all the gaiety that could be mustered in the village; always in spirits, full of frolic and glee, and possessing the talent of singing agreeably, she was an indispensable ingredient in the little parties of pleasure which sometimes took place, and usually consisted in excursions to the Susquehanna, where the company dined, and, when successful in angling, upon fish of their own catching. It was upon one of these occasions, the summer before I saw her, that she had attracted the notice of Mr John Dickinson, the celebrated author of the *Farmer's Letters*. He had been lavish in her praise in the company of a lady of my acquaintance, who told me of it, and thence inferred how much I should be pleased with her when I got to York. I paid little attention to the information, having no conception that I could take any interest in the company of a married woman, considerably older than myself, and the mother of several children. The sequel proved how much I was mistaken, and how essential to my satisfaction was female society; the access to a house in which I could domesticate myself, and receive atten-

tions, not the less grateful from apparently being blended with somewhat maternal. The master of the house, though much less brilliant than the mistress, was always good humoured and kind; and as they kept a small store, I repaid, as well as I could, the hospitality of a frequent dish of tea, by purchasing there what articles I wanted.

After whiling away about six months, the allotted time of my exile, reading a little law in the morning, and either fowling, riding, or strolling along the banks of the Codorus, a beautiful stream which passes through the town, in the afternoon, I, at length, set out on my return to Philadelphia. For the sake of company, and yet more for the satisfaction of seeing the country, I took a circuitous route, crossing the Susquehanna, at M'Call's Ferry, at the *Narrows*. This place is rude and romantic to a great degree. The water is extremely deep, above ——— fathoms, as it is stated in Scull's map, and the current much obstructed by rocks, which rise above the surface in huge and shapeless crags. Leaving the river, we crossed the Octararo, which discharges itself into it; and thence, shaping our course through a pleasant country to Newark and Wilmington, we reached Philadelphia, after a journey of three or four days, in the latter part of October.

I cannot take my final leave of York before mentioning that I visited it again when congress held their session there in the year 1778. Mr Johnson, who had been a widower, was then married to a lady from Maryland. The laws having been silenced by arms, he was no longer prothonotary; and what was still more unfortunate for him, he had no chance of ever becoming so again, being much disaffected to the American cause.

I found him extremely soured by the state of affairs: He was at no pains to conceal his disgust at it, and shook his head in fearful anticipation of future calamities. Five years had produced a considerable change in respect to the inhabitants of the town. The young men I had been acquainted with had been generally in the army, and were consequently dispersed. The E——s were not there, or, at least, I did not see them; and if my memory does not mislead me, the family had removed *to* Baltimore.

Although I had not made myself a lawyer, I returned to the city somewhat improved in health, as well as in my habits of living. My disposition, however, was unaltered. I still affected the man of pleasure and dissipation; had a sovereign contempt for matrimony, and was even puppy enough, with shame I yet think of it, to ape the style of Lovelace, in some of my epistolary correspondences. As my uncle was still bent on qualifying me for the practice of my profession, he proposed my pursuing my studies, for the winter, under the direction of Mr James Allen. As this gentleman was without a clerk, my being there was considered as a matter of mutual convenience. In return for the use of his books, I did the business of his office, which was not very burdensome, and left me sufficient time for reading. Mr Allen, the second son of old Mr William Allen, the Chief Justice, and perhaps the richest and most influential person in the province, was a man of wit and pleasantry, who, for the gratification of his ambition, was determined also to be a man of business, the only road in Pennsylvania to honours and distinction. For this purpose, he engaged in the practice of the law, in which, at this time, he was very assiduous and attentive. As he was

very gentlemanly in his manners, good-humoured, and affable, I passed my time with him altogether to my mind. His good sense and good breeding suggested the true line of behaviour to one beyond the age of apprenticeship, and who, though doing the business of a clerk, did not perform it for hire. He also took a friendly interest in my improvement, submitting the cases in which he was consulted to my previous examination and opinion, and treating the timidity which many feel on first speaking in public, as a weakness very easily overcome. In relation to the subject, he gave me, I remember, a very laughable account of his own *coup d'essai* in conjunction with the facetious Harry Elwes, at Easton.

To have been regular in the history of my education I should have mentioned, that I had already acquired sufficient knowledge of French to be able to read it with tolerable facility. I now undertook to learn the use of the small sword of a Mr Pike, who had lately arrived in Philadelphia, and was much celebrated for his ability both as a dancing and fencing master. Amusement and exercise were my inducements to the undertaking, little thinking that I was acquiring professional skill, and that a sword in a year or two would be a badge of my calling. From what I have since seen, I do not think that Mr Pike, although, like Rousseau's master, sufficiently *fier de l'art de tuer un homme*, was an accomplished swordsman. He nevertheless probably taught the science very well, and had certainly a knack of close pushing, which I have never met with in any other; that is, in the exercise of *quarte* and *tierce*, by placing the point of his foil near the guard of his adversary's, he would disengage and thrust with such quickness, as with certainty to hit the arm of the assailed. I laboured in

vain for six or eight months to acquire this dexterity; from continued practice, however, the sleight of hand came at last, upon which I valued myself not a little, and was equally valued by others. There was but one other pupil in the school who had been equally successful, and this was my particular friend the Reverend Mr Clay, of Newcastle, who was then a merchant, and who, in respect of his present clerical function, might say, *non hos quæsitum munus in usus.* This accomplishment had nearly brought me, when in the army, into perilous contact with a Dr Skinner, who had the fame of a duellist, and having already killed his man. A Mr Hanson of Maryland, who had been a scholar of Pike, and knew what I could do, had made a considerable bet with the Doctor, that he would find a person in the army, who, in spite of him, would hit him in thrusting *tierce*, or rather *quarte over the arm.* He called upon me, when the army lay at Haerlem Heights, to know if I would push: With some reluctance I consented, but before the time appointed arrived, some movement took place, which separated me from Mr Skinner, and the question was not decided. The instruction I received from Pike I considerably improved by practice, and began to grow vain of my skill, until I met with Major Clow of Colonel Baylor's dragoons, who had been a pupil of Angelo and others of the best masters in Europe. He soon convinced me that I had still much room for improvement; though he was pleased to assure me, that I was by far the best fencer he had met with in America, and much superior to Benson, a fencing-master in New York.

During the time of my being with Pike, Mentges, who was afterwards a colonel in our service, had opened a fencing-school. Among his scholars were Messrs Ro-

beson and Bradford, then students of law, the former already spoken of, and the latter of whom became a judge of the supreme court of the state, and afterwards attorney-general of the United States. Coming into the school I was asked to take a foil, and in succession contended with each of these gentlemen; but the result was unlucky for Mentges, as it too plainly evinced his incapacity for the business he had undertaken, and, of course, soon deprived him of his pupils.

At the city tavern, which had been recently established, and was in great vogue, I often spent my evenings. It was, at this time, much frequented by Mr William Hockley, a gentleman of fortune, who was liable to fits of mental derangement; and while these prevailed, was a prominent figure at all public places: for, as he was perfectly harmless, it was not thought necessary to restrain him from going abroad. The effects of this misfortune appeal too forcibly to humanity, to be considered as the subject of merriment, otherwise the flights of this gentleman might, for a short time, have been truly amusing. His fancies were the most lively and brilliant that can be imagined. He had full persuasion that he excelled in every thing that was worthy of attention, though the turf and the theatre were the chief scenes of his glory. Sometimes he achieved the exploits himself; at others, he only witnessed their performance, and, like Horace's *haud ignobilis Argis*, conceived he had been the hearer of the most wonderful actors.

Se credebat miros audire trajedos.

Whatever he chose to do, that he chose to do best; Hallam was but a fool to him when he chose to be a

player; he had more than once, when a fencer, disarmed Pike with a pipe shank; and had taken, when a sportsman, all the purses at all the race-grounds between Savannah and New York. His vivid conceptions supplied him with a stud; and he would run over the names of his horses and their pedigrees, descanting, as he went along, on the respective merits of his riders with astonishing volubility, and with a gaiety and sprightliness of manner, that even Garrick, if he could have equalled, could not have excelled: and this rodomontade was occasionally accompanied by so peculiarly agreeable and animated a laugh, as might have served for a model to a performer of genteel comedy. Yet, notwithstanding these wild coruscations of genius, Mr Hockley, when himself, was remarkably dull and phlegmatic; one who never, perhaps, had had a foil in his hand, and who had little or no relish for races or plays. His case would almost induce a belief, that there was really "a pleasure in being mad, which none but madmen know;" and that, however deplorable the condition of the melancholy or raving maniac, there is a malady of the mind, which, in its paroxysms, is nothing more than a delightful illusion,—*Mentis gratissimus error.*

I suppose the time I have now arrived at to be the winter of 1774-5. From this era, although I could not look back upon my conduct with approbation, I could yet do it without anguish or remorse. I had spent much time unprofitably, but had been guilty of no baseness: I had been rather dissolute in my habits—too indulgent to gay profligacy, and had even sometimes associated with it to the disadvantage of my character, but had happily preserved myself free from its contagion. I

neither liked liquor nor gaming; I had contracted no debts—used no unwarrantable means to obtain money or credit; nor, among my vanities and follies, had I ever committed an action which might tend to deprive me of that self-respect which is the best security for a future course of honourable and moral conduct. I was open, however, to a galling self-reproach, in that at the age of nearly twenty-three, instead of being in a situation to maintain myself, I was still dependant upon my mother, not only for necessaries, but my pocket-expences, which, though not extremely profuse, were less limited than they ought to have been. *

But a period was now approaching which tended equally to interrupt the pursuits of pleasure and of business; and, inasmuch as it did the latter, to lessen my chagrin at being disqualified for engaging in it. Pennsylvania, hitherto so tranquil and so happy, was, in common with her sister provinces, about to experience the calamities, which, sooner or later, seem the inevitable destiny of every region inhabited by man. Her golden age was at its close; and that iron era which was to sever the ties of friendship and of blood; to set father against son, and brother against brother, with many other frightful evils in its train, was about to supervene. The ministry

* Even this reproach I might have spared myself, had I reflected, that there was exclusively due to me, from my father's estate, about L. 170, the proceeds of a prize drawn in the Academy Lottery, by a ticket presented to me by my grandfather, and for which he, as trustee for me, took a bond from my father receiving the money, dated 14th September 1756, and which money I never demanded. But what is this to the world? Not much, to be sure. Still it is something to a proscribed man, interested in mitigating as much as possible his atrocities.

seemed resolved upon enforcing their assumed right of taxing the colonies, and there was an equal determination on the part of America to resist the pretension. The supremacy of the mother country, it was held, on the one hand, necessarily involved the right of legislating over, and, consequently, of imposing taxes on, every part of her dominions; while it was contended, on the other, to be a fundamental principle of the constitution, that no money could be drawn from the people without their consent, signified through the medium of a representation in parliament; and that, as the colonists had no such representation, they were not subject to parliamentary taxation. An exception was, however, made with respect to the regulation of trade, and a distinction was taken between internal and external taxes; the latter of which only, not having revenue for their object, it was said, could be constitutionally laid. The discussion of the points in controversy only served to put the parties further asunder. To the Americans, it disclosed the disadvantages of a dependance on a power so remote as that of Britain, and so oppressed by a weight of debt. It was also perceived, that as we were not, so neither could we be, efficiently represented in her parliament; and that, in any shape, therefore, to admit her right to tax us, would be to throw ourselves entirely on the generosity of a nation, tempted to large exactions from the consideration that she would be relieved in proportion to what she could draw from us, and prompted to invigorate the arm of coercion from her observation of our rapidly increasing strength, which, if not speedily repressed and held in subjection, might soon defy control. A similar view of the subject, no doubt, led the ministry to appreciate the importance of retaining, in due depend-

ance, so fruitful a field of exaction; and to conceive, that, if the application of force should be necessary for the purpose, the sooner it should be applied the better. All things considered, they had certainly some grounds to calculate upon success: And as to the proposal of raising, by our own legislatures, the supplies that might be asked for, besides, that an acquiescence in it would very strongly resemble a renunciation of sovereignty, it is scarcely in the nature of power to condescend to petition for that which it supposes itself able to compel; and pride is ever more gratified in the exercise of generosity, than in the performance of justice. The ministry had the support of a great majority of the nation at home. Interest, which made resistance popular with us, made compulsory measures popular with them. It was this collison, that, at this time, severed the two countries; though nature, which had placed the Atlantic Ocean between them, had thereby interposed an insurmountable bar to a much longer colonial connection on constitutional principles. In another view, when the nurturing season is past, the young, of all kinds, are left to act for themselves. Even man, by a law of his own pursuing, that of nature, has appointed a time for the enfranchisement of youth; and America had perhaps completed her years of minority. But waving analogies, that may be fitter for illustrations than arguments, the merits of the question were, I think, on the side of the colonies; and the inference, that the authority contended for by Britain would ultimately reduce them to vassalage, was by no means chimerical. This being generally perceived and assented to, a great proportion, and perhaps a great majority of the most wealthy and respectable in each of the provinces, was arrayed in opposition to the ministe-

rial claims. I speak of the early stages of the contest. In Pennsylvania, this was certainly the case, though, as to the extent to which the opposition should be carried, there was doubtless a great diversity of opinion; many sincere Whigs considering a separation from the mother country as the greatest evil that could befal us. The merchants were on the Whig side, with few exceptions; and the lawyers, who, from the bent of their studies, as well as their habit of speaking in public, were best qualified to take a lead in the various assemblies that became necessary, were little less unanimous in the same cause.

A few, indeed, of the oldest and most conspicuous practitioners in Philadelphia were either disaffected or lukewarm. Among these, Mr Joseph Galloway, though a member of the first congress, was known to be a disapprover of the measures pursuing. By obtaining a seat in congress, therefore, his design undoubtedly was to impede, if he could not divert, the current of affairs; but finding no matter to work upon, and taking the hint, probably, from a halter coiled up in a box, that was said to be sent to him, he gave up the contest, and went off to the invading army as soon as an opportunity offered. From Mr Chew, Mr Tilghman, and Mr Shippen, no activity was expected or claimed, as they were what was called *Proprietary* men, and in the enjoyment, under that interest, of offices of trust and importance. Their favourable disposition to the American cause was, however, inferred, from the sons of the two first having joined the military associations. Mr John Ross, who loved ease and Madeira much better than liberty and strife, declared for neutrality, saying, that, *let who would be king, he well knew that he should be subject.* An observation, which, judging only from events, may

he thought by some to contain as much intrinsic wisdom as the whole of the *Farmer's Letters*, with all the legal, political, and constitutional knowledge they display. But the abuse of liberty ought not to induce apathy to oppression, however it may dispose us to deliberate before we plunge into a new order of things. Mr James Allen was also suspected of having no very cordial affection for the cause, although he shouldered a musket in the ranks of the militia. What chiefly led to the suspicion was, that he had laboured to organize a committee of privates, which, however accordant such a measure might be, with the republican spirit that was coming in fashion, it was, to say the least of it, a very questionable experiment on military subordination and discipline. As business had, for some time, been entirely laid aside, I no longer attended his office, and, consequently, had less opportunity of knowing his real sentiments. His brother, Mr Andrew Allen, the attorney-general, was more ardent, and considered also to be more sincere. He had attached himself to the corps of City Cavalry, commanded by Mr Marcoe; but not long after, recognising his error, he withdrew, giving out that he would hang up his cap and regimentals as monuments of his folly, and, upon the declaration of independence, he sought an asylum with General Howe. These were the principal gentlemen of standing in the profession, who may be considered as exceptions to the temper of the Pennsylvania bar.

On the Whig side of the question, Mr John Dickinson, always in the political antipodes of Mr Galloway, was, at this time, most prominent and distinguished. By his Farmer's Letters he had acquired a high reputation, both for patriotism and ability; though he was, if I mis-

take not, among the disapprovers of independence, and thence fell under a cloud, which obscured him all the war, and even involved him in the suspicion of disaffection and toryism. Next in conspicuousness to Mr Dickinson, among the members of the city bar, were Mr Reed and Mr M'Kean, each of whom was distinguished both during and after the revolution. The young gentlemen of the profession, with a few exceptions, were also in Whig politics; and, accordingly, fell into some of the associations which were forming for the purpose of acquiring a knowledge of tactics. In the country the same spirit was prevalent at the bar; the members of which, some of whom were of the first eminence, distinguished themselves by their zeal in opposition to the ministerial claims; and as these very forcibly appealed to the pocket, the great body of German farmers, extremely tenacious of property, were readily gained. Exceptions, however, were to be found. The Menonists and some other sects were generally disaffected. As to the genuine sons of Hibernia, it was enough for them to know that England was the antagonist. Stimulants here were wholly superfluous; and the sequel has constantly shown, that, in a contest with Englishmen, Irishmen, like the mettlesome coursers of Phaeton, only require reining in. *Labor est inhibere volentes.* The spirit of liberty and resistance being so generally diffused, it seems scarcely necessary to mention, that it drew into its vortex the mechanical interest, as well as that numerous portion of the community in republics, styled *The People;* in monarchies, *The Populace;* or still more irreverently, *The Rabble or Canaille.* But, notwithstanding this almost unanimous agreement in favour of liberty, neither were all disposed to go the same lengths for it, nor were they

perfectly in unison in the idea annexed to it. Wilkes had just rendered the term popular in America; and though, perhaps, there is not any one in our language more indefinite, yet the sense in which it was, doubtless, most generally received, was that which brings it nearest to licentiousness and anarchy, since hallowed by the phrases of *Equality, and the Rights of Man.*

The Quakers, as a society, were charged with disaffection, and, probably, with truth. They were desirous, however, of screening themselves under their non-resisting principles and known aversion to war; and in this, although they might not have been sincere, they, at least, were consistent. But notwithstanding their endeavour to keep aloof from the contest, a good number of their young men swerved from their tenets; and affecting cockades and uniforms, openly avowed themselves fighting men. They went so far as to form a company of light infantry, under the command of Mr Copperthwaite, which was called *The Quaker Blues*, and instituted in a spirit of competition with *The Greens*, or, as they were sneeringly styled, *The Silk Stocking Company*, commanded by Mr John Cadwalader, and which having early associated, had already acquired celebrity. This nickname evinced that the canker-worm jealousy already tainted the infantile purity of our patriotism. The command of this company, consisting of the flower of the city, was too fine a feather in the cap of its leader to be passed by unenvied: it was therefore branded as an aristocratic assemblage, and Mr (since General) Mifflin had the credit of inventing the invidious appellation. To this association I belonged. There were about seventy of us. We met morning and evening, and from the earnest and even enthusiastic devotion of most of us to learn the duty of

soldiers, the company, in the course of a summer's training, became a truly respectable militia corps. When it had attained some adroitness in the exercises, we met but once a day. This was in the afternoon, and the place of rendezvous the house of the captain, where capacious demi-johns of Madeira were constantly set out in the yard where we formed, for our refreshment before marching out to exercise. The ample fortune of Mr Cadwalader had enabled him to fill his cellars with the choicest liquors; and it must be admitted, that he dealt them out with the most gentlemanly liberality. He probably meant it, in part, as an indemnification for our voluntary submission, while under arms, to all the essential points, as well as the little etiquette of subordination, required of privates under the most regular discipline.

On taking a retrospect of the company, and looking round for those who remain of it, I see a few who are yet alive, and in respectable situations. Much the greater number, however, have resigned their places to that posterity, for whose interests it was the fashion of seventy-six to be extremely concerned. It is to be hoped, therefore, that posterity will continue to pay the easy recompence of an annual toast to the memory of those *departed* friends, who no longer stand in their way. But I am chiefly struck with the strong tendency to evaporation which inheres in a fiery zeal, as well as with the utter insignificance of that dull quality consistency, on the versatile scale of republican virtue. I have a gentleman in my eye who was ever among the foremost in patriotism, and for volunteering our services on every occasion. Was there an enterprise in view, replete with difficulty and danger! The Greens, in his opinion, should mono-

polize, or at least partake of the glory. Was there a sacrifice to be made to economy! They should be the first to set an example of frugality to their countrymen. In short, were it "to fight, to fast, to drink up Eisil, eat a crocodile, he'd do't." Yet this gentleman, so full of zeal in seventy-five, was so thoroughly emptied of it in seventy-six, as to translate himself to the royal standard in New York; for which, however, he found a salvo in the declaration of independence. On the conclusion of the war, he was, in consideration of his youth and inexperience when he committed the *faux pas*, permitted to return to the bosom of his country, and adroitly falling in with the views of the prevailing party, he obtained a subordinate appointment in the treasury department, during the presidencies of Washington and Adams; when again wheeling about with the public sentiment, which ushered into office first M'Kean and then Jefferson, he obtained, upon the principle probably of a *quid pro quo*, an office from each of them, the latter of which he yet retains, and, like the French revolution, returning to the point from which it set out, he is now as pure a patriot as he was at the commencement of his career. It must be confessed, that the gentleman has had a serpentine course: Yet, without arraigning his motives, which may have been good, though diversified, I shall content myself with observing, that he has had the singular fortune to behold, with equal eye, the carting of the Tories in Philadelphia in the year 1775; the sad havoc of the Whigs in New York in the year 1776; the discomfiture of the Anti-federalists in the years 1790 and 1794; then the overthrow and persecution of the Federalists in the year 1800: In each and every of these turmoils he has contrived to be uppermost, and still rides tri-

triumphant on the surface of the *tempestuous sea*, an unequivocal proof of his fitness for the times in which he has been destined to appear. This instance would not have been adverted to, were it not that, in an illustration of the times, it was too remarkable to be omitted.

In preparing for the scene of war that was approaching, no martial employment was neglected. It was even deemed of consequence to be a marksman with a pistol; and connected with this object, I recollect an unpleasant incident, which might also have proved a serious one. Captain Biddle and myself, having gone out to take a shot, and posted ourselves in a situation thought convenient and safe, we marked our target on a board fence, in a cross street, between Arch and Race Streets. We had fired several times, and were loading again, when a man suddenly coming upon us, out of breath, pale as ashes, without his hat, and his hair standing on end, exclaimed that we had killed his child. This information, as may be supposed, put a stop to our amusement; and we immediately accompanied him to his house with feelings not to be envied. When we arrived, however, we found matters not so bad as had been anticipated. The child was crying in its mother's arms: it had been struck upon the body; but the force of the blow had been broken by a loose linsey petticoat. The ball had passed through a pane of glass; and, from the appearance of the hole, exactly corresponding to its size, without diverging cracks, it must have had considerable force, though discharged at a distance which we thought greater than our pistols would carry. By expressions of concern for the accident, and the accompaniment of a few dollars, our transgression was overlooked, and all perturbation composed.

The daily, unremitted course of exercise which my military duties and my fencing at this time imposed, had thoroughly established my health. The serious aspect of the times had also brought temperance into fashion; and, instead of tavern suppers, I generally passed my evenings with my female acquaintance, among whom there was one to whom my affections were deeply and permanently engaged. The attachment was reciprocal; and the din of arms which threatened us with a separation, involving a cruel uncertainty in respect to the destiny of our love, but served to render it more ardent and more tender. Vows of constancy were mutually plighted; and we gave so much of our time to each other, that I had little to spare to my quondam companions, whom I was really desirous of shaking off, and who, on their part, complained that I had turned dangler, and became good for nothing. There was a time when their raillery might have had some effect, but now it was entirely thrown away, and, like a true knight, I wholly devoted myself to my mistress and my country.

Among the disaffected in Philadelphia, Dr Kearsley was pre-eminently ardent and rash. An extremely zealous loyalist, and impetuous in his temper, he had given much umbrage to the Whigs; and, if I am not mistaken, he had been detected in some hostile machinations. Hence he was deemed a proper subject for the fashionable punishment of tarring, feathering, and carting. He was seized at his own door by a party of the militia, and, in the attempt to resist them, received a wound in his hand from a bayonet. Being overpowered, he was placed in a cart provided for the purpose, and, amidst a multitude of boys and idlers, pa-

raded through the streets to the tune of the rogues' march. I happened to be at the coffeehouse when the concourse arrived there. They made a halt, while the Doctor, foaming with rage and indignation, without his hat, his wig dishevelled and bloody from his wounded hand, stood up in the cart and called for a bowl of punch. It was quickly handed to him; when, so vehement was his thirst, that he drained it of its contents before he took it from his lips. What were the feelings of others on this lawless proceeding I know not, but mine, I must confess, revolted at the spectacle. I was shocked at seeing a lately respected citizen so cruelly vilified, and was imprudent enough to say, that, had I been a magistrate, I would, at every hazard, have interposed my authority in suppression of the outrage. But this was not the only instance which convinced me that I wanted nerves for a revolutionist. It must be admitted, however, that the conduct of the populace was marked by a lenity which peculiarly distinguished the cradle of our republicanism. Tar and feathers had been dispensed with, and, excepting the injury he had received in his hand, no sort of violence was offered by the mob to their victim. But to a man of high spirit, as the Doctor was, the indignity in its lightest form was sufficient to madden him: it probably had this effect, since his conduct became so extremely outrageous, that it was thought necessary to confine him. From the city he was soon after removed to Carlisle, where he died during the war.

A few days after the carting of Mr Kearsley, Mr Isaac Hunt, the attorney, was treated in the same manner, but he managed the matter much better than his precursor. Instead of braving his conductors like the Doctor, Mr Hunt was a pattern of meekness and humility; and at every halt that was made, he rose and ex-

pressed his acknowledgments to the crowd for their forbearance and civility. After a parade of an hour or two, he was set down at his own door, as uninjured in body as in mind. He soon after removed to one of the islands, if I mistake not, to Barbadoes, where, it was understood, he took orders.

Not long after these occurrences, Major Skene, of the British army, ventured to show himself in Philadelphia. Whatever might have been his inducement to the measure, it was deemed expedient by the newly constituted authorities to have him arrested and secured. A guard was accordingly placed over him at his lodgings, at the city tavern. The officer to whose charge he was especially committed was Mr Francis Wade, the brewer, an Irishman of distinguished zeal in the cause, and one who was supposed to possess talents peculiarly befitting him for the task of curbing the spirit of an haughty Briton, which Skene undoubtedly was. I well recollect the day that the guard was paraded to escort him out of the city on his way to some other station. An immense crowd of spectators stood before the door of his quarters, and lined the street through which he was to pass. The weather being warm, the window sashes of his apartment were raised, and Skene, with his bottle of wine upon the table, having just finished his dinner, roared out, in the voice of a Stentor, *God save great George our King*. Had the spirit of seventy-five, in any degree, resembled the spirit of Jacobinism, to which it has been unjustly compared, this bravado would unquestionably have brought the major to the *lamp post*, and set his head upon a pike; but as, fortunately for him, it did not, he was suffered to proceed with his song, and the auditory seemed more generally amused than offended.

CHAPTER V.

Assembly of Congress—Continental Battalions—Recruiting—The Author charged with a Commission to General Schuyler—Narrative of his Journey.

In the spring of 1775 Congress assembled in Philadelphia. It was in every respect a venerable assembly; and although Pennsylvania had delegated to it some of her most distinguished characters, they were supposed to be eclipsed by the superior talents which came from the southward and eastward. New England had sent her Adams's, and Virginia her Lee's and Henry's; all of whom were spoken of as men of the first rate abilities. Not long after the organization of this body, their president, Peyton Randolph of Virginia, died, and John Hancock of Boston was selected to supply his place. Towards the close of the year, they passed a resolution for levying some continental battalions, four of which were to be raised in Pennsylvania. One had already been raised and officered by the province; but as the applicants for commissions in this were not of my set of acquaintance, I did not apply. Upon the promulgation, however, of this resolution of congress, I signified to the committee of safety, in whom the power of appointment was lodged, and of which body my uncle was a member, my wish to be employed. The appointments were made, and in a list of thirty-two captains, I ranked the sixteenth, and accordingly received my commission

from congress, dated January the 6th, 1776. Upon this nomination of the committee of safety, which also extended to all the inferior commissioned officers, the field officers, who had already been assigned to particular battalions, had a meeting for the purpose of selecting their captains and subalterns. In this arrangement, it fell to my lot to be attached to the third battalion, under the command of Colonel John Shee, and of which Mr Lambert Cadwalader, the younger brother of Mr John Cadwalader, already mentioned, was lieutenant-colonel. It appeared to have been the primary object of these gentlemen to select, as much as possible, their officers from the city and its neighbourhood, of whom they had a greater proportion than was to be found in either of the other regiments, respectively commanded by St Clair, Wayne, and Magaw. But this circumstance, though it might have a propitious influence on the discipline of the regiment when raised, was certainly unfavourable to the business of recruiting, since, as the country was chiefly to be depended upon for men, country officers would, of course, have the best chance of obtaining them.

But two gentlemen, of what might be called our principal families, had come forward on this occasion. These were Mr Cadwalader, and Mr William Allen, who was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of St Clair: so that, of four sons, the eldest alone, Mr John Allen, was an acknowledged disapprover of our proceedings. The father, too old to be active, was yet supposed to lean to the Whig side. It would appear, however, from the sequel, that this family were either never cordial in the cause, or that they had inconsiderately imagined that its object might be obtained by a resolute show of resistance merely, since, upon the adop-

tion of the measure of independence, all the sons, excepting James, joined General Howe in New York. He remained at home, and took his chance with his native country, though wholly inactive. I remember once seeing him on New York Island, towards the close of the summer of 1776, where he probably came to see how the land lay. But he was then in declining health, and, in somewhat more than a year after, was removed from all sublunary solicitudes; as was his father also before the close of the war. The Revolution was fatal to this family, precipitating it from the very pinnacle of importance in Pennsylvania, down to the lowest depth of insignificance with both parties. Its early whiggism had perhaps as much disgusted the Tories, as its final defection had exasperated the Whigs; and the British army, though it yielded it protection, afforded it little of respect. Mr William Allen endeavoured to recover his consequence by raising, or endeavouring to raise, a regiment on the royal side in Philadelphia in the year 1778, very pompously heading his recruiting advertisement with the words, *Nil desperandum Teucro duce, et auspice Teucro.* It is to be presumed, however, that this swaggering motto referred to General Howe, and not to himself.

Nor, in adverting to the mutability of human affairs, can we overlook the unfavourable tendency of the contest to the proprietary family. Both the brothers, John and Richard Penn, had been governors of Pennsylvania; the former being in office at the beginning of hostilities. By yielding to the torrent, which it would have been impossible to withstand, he gave no offence, and avoided reproach; though it was deemed expedient to have him secured and removed from Philadelphia on the approach of the royal army in the year 1777. Mr Richard Penn,

having no official motives for reserve, was even upon terms of familiarity with some of the most thorough-going Whigs, such as General Lee and others: An evidence of this was the pleasantry ascribed to him, on occasion of a member of congress, one day, observing to his compatriots, that, at all events, "they must hang together."—"If you do not, gentlemen," said Mr Penn, "I can tell you, that you will be very apt to hang separately."

Of all the governors of Pennsylvania, under the old *regime*, he was probably the most popular, though his popularity might not have been precisely of the kind which irradiates a favourite of the present day. It was, it must be confessed, a good deal confined to the city; and perhaps rather much to that description of persons who are not the chosen people of Virginia republicanism. But it was such as was then in fashion, and good and substantial enough for those who knew no better. It required, however, fewer sacrifices, and might yield, possibly, as much pleasure on retrospection, as that enjoyed by the most idolized of our democratic worthies.

Against the expected hostilities Pennsylvania had made immense exertions. Prior to the four regiments of St Clair, Shee, Wayne, and Magaw, that of De Haas, and Hand's rifle regiment, were already raised and equipped; and afterwards, Irvine's, and two provincial battalions, respectively commanded by Miles and Atlee, in the whole, nine regiments, complete and very reputably officered. Had all the other provinces done as much in proportion to their ability, and the men been enlisted for the war, we might have avoided the hair-breadth escapes which ensued.

To return to smaller concerns. An anxiety, little inferior to that of the colonels, in procuring what they

thought good officers for their regiments, at this time agitated the commanders of companies, in respect to the subalterns that should be assigned them. My second lieutenant, Mr Forrest, who had served his apprenticeship to an apothecary in Philadelphia, I well knew to be active, capable, and more than commonly adroit in the military exercises, but my first lieutenant I had not yet seen. I was not, however, long in the dark; and when he appeared, I cannot say that his exterior was the most prepossessing, or that it announced those qualities we at first look for in the soldier. He was tall, extremely thin, and somewhat lounging in his appearance; and to add to its uncouthness, he wore an enormous fur cap. Colonel Shee used to describe, somewhat humorously, his first impression upon *him;* and when he was first seen by a little Scotch servant boy of my mother's, who afterwards became my drummer, he emphatically exclaimed, *Well, sic an a spindle!* Yet for all this, any man might have thought himself honoured in having Mr Edwards for his lieutenant. Though born in Pennsylvania, he was recent from a college in Rhode Island. Possessing good sense, a remarkable aptitude to take a polish, and talents to recommend himself to his superiors in command, he soon obtained the favour of the colonels of the regiment, with whom he was upon a very familiar footing. He was, besides, a man of courage, and in the course of the war, became the aid-de-camp and particular friend of General Lee, so much so, that he was one of the principal devisees in the will of that officer. Of my ensign, it will be enough to say, that he was a plain and unaspiring man, who, in the walk of humble duty, "kept the noiseless tenor of his way."

The object now, was to raise my company, and as the

streets of the city had been pretty well swept by the preceding and contemporary levies, it was necessary to have recourse to the country. My recruiting party was therefore sent out in various directions; and each of my officers, as well as myself, exerted himself in the business. Among the many unpleasant peculiarities of the American service, it was not the least that the drudgery, which in old military establishments belongs to serjeants and corporals, here devolved on the commissioned officers; and that the whole business of recruiting, drilling, &c. required their unremitted personal attention. This was more emphatically the case in recruiting, since the common opinion was, that the men and the officers were never to be separated, and hence, to see the persons who were to command them, and, above all, the captain, was deemed of vast importance by those inclining to enlist: for this reason I found it necessary, in common with my brother officers, to put my feelings most cruelly to the rack; and in an excursion I once made to Frankford, they were tried to the utmost. A number of fellows at the tavern, at which my party rendezvoused, indicated a desire to enlist, but although they drank freely of our liquor, they still held off. I soon perceived that the object was to amuse themselves at our expence, and that, if there might be one or two among them really disposed to engage, the others would prevent them. One fellow in particular, who had made the greatest show of taking the bounty, presuming on the weakness of our party, consisting only of a drummer, corporal, my second lieutenant, and myself, began to grow insolent, and manifested an intention to begin a quarrel, in the issue of which, he, no doubt, calculated on giving us a drubbing. The disgrace of such a circumstance presented itself to

my mind in colours the most dismal, and I resolved, that, if a scuffle should be unavoidable, it should, at least, be as serious as the hangers, which my lieutenant and myself carried by our sides, could make it. Our endeavour, however, was to guard against a contest; but the moderation we testified was attributed to fear. At length the arrogance of the principal ruffian rose to such a height, that he squared himself for battle, and advanced towards me in an attitude of defiance. I put him by with an admonition to be quiet, though with a secret determination, that, if he repeated the insult, to begin the war, whatever might be the consequence. The occasion was soon presented; when, taking excellent aim, I struck him with my utmost force between the eyes, and sent him staggering to the other end of the room. Then instantly drawing our hangers, and receiving the manful co-operation of the corporal and drummer, we were fortunate enough to put a stop to any further hostilities. It was sometime before the fellow I had struck recovered from the blow, but when he did, he was quite an altered man. He was as submissive as could be wished, begging my pardon for what he had done, and although he would not enlist, he hired himself to me for a few weeks as a fifer, in which capacity he had acted in the militia; and during the time he was in this employ, he bore about the effects of his insolence, in a pair of black eyes. This incident would be little worthy of relating, did it not serve in some degree to correct the error of those who seem to conceive the year 1776 to have been a season of almost universal patriotic enthusiasm. It was far from prevalent, in my opinion, among the lower ranks of the people, at least in Pennsylvania. At all times, indeed, licentious levelling principles are much to the ge-

neral taste, and were, of course, popular with us; but the true merits of the contest were little understood or regarded. The opposition to the claims of Britain originated with the better sort: it was truly aristocratic in its commencement; and as the oppression to be apprehended had not been felt, no grounds existed for general enthusiasm. The cause of liberty, it is true, was fashionable, and there were great preparations to fight for it; but a zeal, proportioned to the magnitude of the question, was only to be looked for in the minds of those sagacious politicians, who inferred effects from causes, and who, as Mr Burke expresses it, "snuffed the approach of tyranny in every tainted breeze."

Certain it was, at least, that recruiting went on but heavily. Some officers had been more successful than others, but none of the companies were complete: mine, perhaps, contained about half its complement of men, and these had been obtained by dint of great exertion. In this situation, Captain Lenox of Shee's regiment also, suggested the trying our luck on the Eastern shore of Maryland, particularly at Chester, situated on the river of that name. It having been a place of some trade, it was supposed there might be seamen or *long shore* men there, out of employ. We accordingly set out on the expedition, making our first effort at Warwick, an inconsiderable village, a few miles within the boundaries of Maryland. Here we remained a day or two, our stay having been prolonged by bad weather. At the tavern we put up at, we made acquaintance with a gentleman of note, who resided in the neighbourhood, and pretty generally known by the familiar name of Dan Heath. He seemed to like our company, as he was continually with us while we staid. Mr Heath was a

sportsman, and apparently too little interested in political concerns, to be either much of a Whig or a Tory, though, from the indifference he evinced, we rather concluded him the latter. He helped us, however, to a recruit, a fellow, he said, who would do to stop a bullet as well as a better man, and, as he was a truly worthless dog, he held, that the neighbourhood would be much indebted to us for taking him away. When we left Warwick, he fulfilled his promise of accompanying us some miles under pretence of aiding us in getting men, but as he showed us none, we were convinced that he attended us more for his own sake than ours, and that, having nothing to do, probably, he had availed himself of the opportunity to kill a little time. He gave the tone to the conversation on the road, which generally turned on the sports of the turf and the cockpit; but he never spoke with so much animation, as when expatiating on those feats of human prowess, wherein victory is achieved by *tooth and nail*, in modern phrase, by biting and gouging: and pointing out to us one of the heroes of these direful conflicts, "There," says he, "is a fellow that has not his match in the country; see what a set of teeth he has, a man's thumb would be nothing to them."

On bidding good morning to Mr Heath, with whose vivacity we were amused, we pursued our course to Chester, and as soon as we arrived there, delivered our letters of introduction. The gentlemen to whom they were addressed received us with the utmost politeness, and declared their warmest wishes for the success of our errand, though accompanied with expressions of regret, that they could not give us encouragement to beat up in their town, as well because there were few, if any, in

it, that were likely to enlist, as that their own province was about raising troops; and as that was the case, it would not be taken well should they assist in transferring any of their men to the line of Pennsylvania. With such unfavourable prospects in Maryland, it would have been folly to have proceeded further: we, therefore, set off on our way home the next morning, declining several invitations to dinner. We found this country well deserving of its reputation for hospitality. Between Warwick and Georgetown, we were taken home to lodge by a gentleman of the name of Wilmer, whom we had never seen before: We were warmly pressed by Mr Harry Pierce, with whom we met by accident on the road, to spend some time with him at his residence in the neighbourhood, and met with no less cordiality from Mr Thomas Ringold, of Chester, who had once, when very young, lodged at my mother's. Returning by Warwick, we sent forward our solitary recruit, for whom we tossed up; and in winning, I was, in fact, but a very small gainer, since his merits had been set at their full value by Mr Heath; and he was never fit for any thing better than the inglorious post of camp colour man.

After this unsuccessful jaunt I bent my course to the Four-lane-ends, Newtown, and Corryell's Ferry; thence passing into Jersey, I proceeded to the Hickory tavern, to Pittstown, Baptisttown, Flemmingtown, and other towns, whose names I do not remember. As Captain Stewart (the late General Walter Stewart) of our regiment had recently reapt this field, I was only a gleaner: In the whole of my tour, therefore, I picked up but three or four men: and could most sincerely have said,

> That the recruiting trade, with all its train
> Of endless care, fatigue, and endless pain,

I could most gladly have renounced, even without the very preferable alternative of Captain Plume. My number of privates might now have amounted to about forty, but these were soon augmented by the noble addition of one and twenty stout native Americans, brought by Lieutenants Edwards and Forrest from Egg Harbour.

Towards spring our battalion was complete; and already, from the unremitted attention that had been paid to it by the officers of every grade, it had made, for so short a time, a very laudable progress in discipline. Besides partial drillings, it was exercised every morning and evening; and what was of still more importance, habits of obedience and subordination were strictly inculcated and maintained. We were comparatively well armed, uniformed, and equipped; and it is but justice to say, that, in point of all the exteriors, by which military corps are tested, ours was on a footing with the most promising on the continent. We were quartered in the barracks, together with the other battalions that were raising; and by way of counteracting the general gloom, not diminished by the practice of fast days and sermons, borrowed from New England, we promoted balls and other amusements. Had the contest been a religious one, and our people been inflamed by a zeal on points of faith like the Crusaders, or the army of Cromwell, this might have been the proper method of exciting them to acts of heroism; but they were to be taken as they were, and as this was not the case, it was certainly not the mode to make soldiers in Pennsylvania. The puritanical spirit was unknown among us; and the

endeavour to promote it did but conflict with other propensities on which a military ardour might be engrafted. It might, however, have been wholly different in New England: but whether so or not, General Lee, with his usual profaneness, treated their solemnities with ridicule, telling them, in the spirit of the ancient fable of Hercules and the waggoner, that *Heaven was ever found favourable to strong battalions.*

About the close of the month of May I was appointed to carry a sum of money in specie to General Schuyler at Lake George, for the purpose of promoting the operations in Canada; and I owed my nomination to this service to the friendly intentions of President Hancock, who had particularly designated me. Ensign Stout was the officer assigned by Colonel Shee to accompany me. We accordingly set out in a chair, that being thought the most convenient mode of carrying the money, which was enclosed in two or three sealed bags. One soldier, mounted and armed in addition, constituted the escort; and we were furnished with credentials for obtaining fresh horses as often as they might be necessary. To see the country between New York and the lake, which was entirely new, both to my companion and myself, was highly agreeable; but we did not so well like the responsibility of our charge. It is obvious that it might have been wrested from us without great difficulty, even though each one of the triumvirate had possessed the bravery of Cæsar. Hence, policy dictated the concealment of the treasure, so far as might consist with the requisite vigilance. At Princeton, where we dined on the second day of our journey, we thought proper to have our bags brought into our room. The innkeeper, like the generality of his profession, was loquacious and

inquisitive; and being an extremely good Whig into the bargain, took the liberty of sounding us respecting the contents of our bags, of which he had formed a very shrewd guess. We did not think it necessary to deny that they contained money, or to conceal from him the object of our mission, which he was equally desirous of knowing. Upon learning that the destination was Canada, he entered into a dissertation upon our affairs in that quarter, telling us among other things, that the Prussian General, the Baron Woedkie, had been a few days before at his house, on his way to that country. But he reprobated the baron in very hard terms, repeatedly exclaiming, with a most significant emphasis, that *he was no general*; and in the sequel, favouring us with his reasons for this opinion, gave us to understand, that he (the baron) had made his servant grease with a feather a certain part, to which he gave its very coarsest appellation, that had suffered from the friction of riding. Whether our host had become acquainted with this circumstance by looking through a key-hole, or by what other means, we were not informed, but its unlucky effect upon him convinced me of the justness of the observation, that *no man is a hero to his valet de chambre.* This same baron it was, who, finding liberty one day the impassioned theme of some members of congress, and others, exclaimed—*Ah! liberdy is a fine ding; I likes liberdy; der Koenig von Prusse is a great man for liberdy!* and so no doubt he was, for his own liberty or importance as a member of the Germanic body; and it might puzzle many a flaming demagogue to show a better title to the character.

But notwithstanding this requisite for our service, evinced by the baron's love of liberty, I believe he did

not very well suit us; and that, although *The Prussian General* made a great noise upon his first appearance, the public mind in respect to him, whether correct or not, pretty well accorded with that of our host, who, at parting with us, expressed much anxiety for our safety, and that of our charge, recommending to us in future, not to take our bags out of the chair, where we breakfasted and dined. The propriety of this advice we were aware of, and observed it where practicable; that is, where the treasure was sufficiently under our eyes without removal.

At New York, we spent about an hour in a slight survey of the barricades, which General Lee had caused to be thrown across some of the streets; and on our way out of town, fell in with a New England regiment at exercise. Its commander was extremely busy in instructing his troops in street-firing, at that day our most favourite manœuvre; as we simply supposed that all our great battles were to be fought in our cities. We surveyed these men with all the respect that was due to the great military reputation of their country; but we were obliged to confess, that they did not entirely come up to the ideas we had formed of the heroes of Lexington and Bunker's Hill. This we took to be a militia corps, from the circumstance of its not being a whit superior, in any visible respect, to the worst of ours. However, thought we, these men may nevertheless have some knack at fighting, which only discloses itself in the moment of action.

After leaving New York, we passed through a number of villages between that city and Albany; but these, of which the almanacks will give a much more accurate account than I can, I shall neither undertake to name or

loette. Poughkeepsie, however, must be excepted; as here we quartered for a night, under the hospitable roof of *old* Dr Baird, so called to distinguish him from his son of the same profession. The Doctor was a relation of Mr Stout's, and on my being made known to him, I had the satisfaction to find that he had formerly been acquainted with both my father and mother, of whom he spoke in the warmest and most friendly terms. My mother, he was pleased to say, he remembered the finest girl in Philadelphia; and that she had the manners of a lady bred at court. The old gentleman was one of those who went under the denomination of Tories; but if it was justly applied, he possessed too much liberality to permit his politics, in any degree, to interfere with the duties of hospitality. He considered us probably as young men, deluded, but not seditious; as accessary to, but not responsible for, the calamities which were about to befal the country; and in addition to a good supper, entertained us with the military exploits of the Duke of Marlborough, who appeared to be his favourite hero.

In the morning betimes we pursued our journey, and in the course of it reached Albany about noon. Here we dined with a gentleman in regimentals, bearing the title of major; though I do not either recollect his name, or the corps to which he belonged, if, indeed, he belonged to any, for majors and captains had by this time become very good travelling appellations. He had just returned from Canada, and drew a most lamentable picture of our affairs in that country, descanting upon men and things with equal freedom and satire. He delivered himself with unusual flippancy; and wound up a very animated philippic upon our military operations in that quarter, with an, "In short, gentlemen, we have

commissaries there without provisions; quartermasters without stores; generals without troops; and troops without discipline, by G—d."

Leaving Albany, we passed by Stillwater, Saratoga, and other places, which have since acquired interest from the defeat and surrender of General Burgoyne and his army. Near to Fort Edward we met Dr Franklin, Mr Carroll, and (I think) Mr Chase, returning from Canada, to which they had been deputed commissioners from congress. We delivered them a letter from that body, as we had been enjoined to do in case of meeting them, as also to take their orders in respect to our ulterior proceedings: As they made no change in our destination, we went on. Immediately beyond Fort Edward, the country assumed a dreary, cheerless aspect. Between this and Lake George, a distance of about twelve miles, it was almost an entire wood, acquiring a deeper gloom, as well from the general prevalence of pines, as from its dark extended covert being presented to the imagination as an appropriate scene for the "treasons, stratagems, and spoils," of savage hostility; to which purpose it had been devoted in former days of deadly dissention. It was in this tract of country that several actions had been fought; that Baron Dieskau had been defeated; and that American blood had flowed, as well as English and French; in commemoration of which, the terror we attach to the adventitious circumstances which seem to accelerate man's doom, had given to a piece of standing water, near the road, the name of *Bloody Pond*. The descending sun had shed a browner horror on the wilderness; and as we passed the dismal pool, we experienced that transient emotion of commiseration, which is natural to the mind when contemplating past events, in-

volving the fall of friends, the fortune of war, and the sad lot of human kind. *Denique ob casus bellorum, et sortem hominum.*

At length, after a journey of three hundred and twenty miles, arriving at the quarters of General Schuyler on the border of the lake, we acquitted ourselves of our charge. He proposed to me, if agreeable, to go on with it; but in addition to attractions of a private nature which drew me to Philadelphia, the wish to be there in order to make provision for our march to New York, orders for which had been daily expected before we set out, induced me to decline the opportunity of seeing the country beyond the lake, as well as my friends in the northern army. We, therefore, only staid at this post until the return dispatches to congress were prepared, which was the third day after our arrival.

Though General Schuyler has been charged with such haughtiness of demeanour, as to have induced the troops of New England to decline serving under his command, as stated in Marshall's Life of Washington, the reception we met with was not merely courteous, but kind. His quarters being contracted, a bed was prepared for us in his own apartment, and we experienced civilities that were flattering from an officer of his high rank. Though thoroughly the man of business, he was also a gentleman and a man of the world; and well calculated to sustain the reputation of our army in the eyes of the British officers, (disposed to depreciate it,) as is evidenced by the account given by General Burgoyne of the manner in which he was entertained by him at Albany. But that he should have been displeasing to the *Yankies*, I am not at all surprised: He certainly was at

no pains to conceal the extreme contempt he felt for a set of officers, who were both a disgrace to their stations and the cause in which they acted! Being yet a stranger to the character of these men, and the constitution of that part of our military force which in Pennsylvania was considered as the bulwark of the nation, I must confess my surprise at an incident which took place while at dinner. Besides the General, the members of his family and ourselves, there were at table a lady and gentleman from Montreal. A New England captain came in upon some business, with that abject servility of manner which belongs to persons of the meanest rank; he was neither asked to sit or take a glass of wine, and after announcing his wants, was dismissed with that peevishness of tone we apply to a low and vexatious intruder. This man, in his proper sphere, might have been entitled to better treatment; but when presuming to thrust himself into a situation, in which far other qualifications than his were required, and upon an occasion, too, which involved some of the most important of human interests, I am scarcely prepared to say it was unmerited.

The day we spent at this station was employed in taking a view of the remains of Fort William Henry, and in sauntering along the margin of the immense fountain of pure water which constitutes Lake George. We were much indebted, upon this occasion, to the polite attentions of Mr Brockolst Livingston, who was, at this time, one of the aids-de-camp of General Schuyler, and who so far dispensed with his avocations as to show us what was worthy of being seen. We lost no time in setting off, as soon as the dispatches were ready for us; and returned with all possible expedition, in order to pre-

pare ourselves for the expected march of our regiment to join the main army under the commander-in-chief. Orders for that purpose had already been received, and were complied with in about a week after our return. The troops were transported by water to Trenton; from whence, marching to Elizabethtown, they were again embarked in vessels which carried them to New York.

CHAPTER VI.

The Author reluctantly leaves Philadelphia—Character of the Army at New York—Erection of Fort Washington and Fort Lee—Connecticut Light House—Arrival of the British Troops at Long Island—Action of 27th of August and subsequent Skirmishes—Retreat of Americans from Long Island.

THE much deprecated event of marching from Philadelphia was not the less afflicting for having been foreseen. The reader is acquainted with the attraction which existed there; and it is for those alone who have felt the effervescence of the passions, to form a just conception of the pangs attendant on this separation from it. To say it was a disruption of my heart strings, would be a language neither too forcible nor figurative for the occasion. The other absences imposed by the demands of imperious duty were not without disquietude; but they were cheered by the prospect of a speedy termination. This, before me, was a toiling sea without a shore; a dreary, illimitable void: And in subjecting myself to the stern mandate which now forced me away, I recognise a sacrifice which imparts some merit to my poor exertions in behalf of my country. If equal deprivations were sustained by others, I venture confidently to affirm, that, estimated by the measure of suffering, none were greater than my own. On account of my late service

interfering with the necessary preparations for the march, I had been permitted, for about a week, to defer the moment of exile. When no longer to be postponed, I took my passage in the stage, where, indifferent to all around me, I sat ruminating on scenes of happiness departed, cheerless and lost to every hope of their return. Dreams of glory, it is true, sometimes crossed my imagination, but discordant to the tone of the predominant passion, the images were painful, and deeply tinged with despair. In so desolating a frame of mind, I perceived the necessity of active duty, which should leave me no time for reflection; and under this impression, as I approached my place of destination, became as impatient for its attainment as I had been reluctant in setting out for it; eager to immerse myself in martial occupations,

> And in the hardy camp and toilsome march,
> Forget all softer and less manly cares.

A considerable portion of our motley army had already assembled in New York and its vicinity. The troops were chiefly from the eastern provinces; those from the southern, with the exception of Hand's, Magaw's, and our regiment, had not yet come on. The appearance of things was not much calculated to excite sanguine expectations in the mind of a sober observer. Great numbers of people were indeed to be seen, and those who are not accustomed to the sight of bodies under arms are always prone to exaggerate them. But this propensity to swell the mass had not an equal tendency to convert it into soldiery; and the irregularity, want of discipline, bad arms, and defective equipment in all respects, of this multitudinous assemblage, gave no favourable impression of its prowess. The materials of

which the eastern battalions were composed were apparently the same as those of which I had seen so unpromising a specimen at Lake George. I speak particularly of the officers, who were in no single respect distinguishable from their men, other than in the coloured cockades, which, for this very purpose, had been prescribed in general orders, a different colour being assigned to the officers of each grade. So far from aiming at a deportment which might raise them above their privates, and thence prompt them to due respect and obedience to their commands, the object was, by humility, to preserve the existing blessing of equality; an illustrious instance of which was given by Colonel Putnam, the chief engineer of the army, and no less a personage than the nephew of the major-general of that name. "What," says a person meeting him one day with a piece of meat in his hand, "carrying home your rations yourself, Colonel!"—"Yes," says he, "and I do it to set the officers a good example." But if any aristocratic tendencies had been really discovered by the Colonel among his countrymen, requiring this wholesome example, they must have been of recent origin, and the effect of southern contamination, since I have been credibly informed, that it was no unusual thing in the army before Boston for a colonel to make drummers and fifers of his sons, thereby not only being enabled to form a very snug economical mess, but to aid also considerably the revenue of the family chest. In short, it appeared, that the sordid spirit of gain was the vital principle of the greater part of the army. The only exception I recollect to have seen, to these miserably constituted bands from New England, was the regiment of Glover from Marblehead. There was an appearance of discipline in this

corps; the officers seemed to have mixed with the world, and to understand what belonged to their stations. Though deficient, perhaps, in polish, it possessed an apparent aptitude for the purpose of its institution, and gave a confidence that myriads of its meek and lowly brethren were incompetent to inspire. But even in this regiment there were a number of negroes, which, to persons unaccustomed to such associations, had a disagreeable, degrading effect.

If there were any troops here, at this time, from Jersey, I do not recollect seeing them; and those of New York appeared not to be very numerous. They, however, afforded officers, who might have been distinguished without a badge; and who were sufficiently men of the world to know that the levelling principle was, of all others, the most incompatible with good soldiership. Colonel Hamilton had been furnished by this province, making his *debut* in the new career as a captain of artillery; but I never saw him in this capacity, and I believe he was soon taken into the family of the commander in chief. Reinforcements were yet expected from the southward. Among these were Miles's and Atlee's provincial regiments from Pennsylvania; Hazlet's from Delaware, and Smallwood's from Maryland, both, I think, on the continental establishment; and, in addition, large draughts from the militia of Pennsylvania. All these were assembled in time for the opening of the campaign; but although the multitude, of which they were a part, contained some excellent raw materials, and was not without officers of spirit, possessing feelings suitable to their situation, yet diffused throughout the mass, they were certainly extremely rare. The eye looked round in vain for the leading gentry of the country; those, most em-

phatically pledged to the cause, "by life, by fortune, and by sacred honour;" * and, taking the army in the aggregate, with its equipments along with it, he must have been a novice or a sanguine calculator, who could suppose it capable of sustaining the lofty tone and verbal energy of congress. In point of numbers merely it was deficient, though a fact then little known or suspected. Newspapers and common report, indeed, made it immensely numerous; and it was represented that General Washington had so many men, that he wanted no more, and had actually sent many home as superfluous. It is true, there were men enough coming and going; yet his letters of that day demonstrate how truly weak he was in steady permanent soldiers.

It was, probably, between the twentieth and twenty-fifth of June that I arrived in this busy scene; in a few days after which, our regiment and Magaw's were marched towards Kingsbridge, and encamped upon the ground on which Fort Washington was erected. We were here under the command of General Mifflin, and immediately employed in the construction of that fortress, under the direction of Colonel Putnam, who, as already mentioned, was our principal engineer; and, considering his want of experience, not destitute, perhaps, of merit in his profession. As a man may be a rhetorician, or a logician, though unacquainted with the terms of the art; so might Mr Putnam have been a good practical art-

* Congress, to be sure, were privileged; and there must be civil functions as well as military. But these were a good deal a matter of choice; and as the war was a common cause, the very creature of association, its rubs should have been somewhat equalized.—Thoughts of this kind, however, would sometimes intrude into minds soured by hard duty.

ist, though misterming the *Gorge* the *George*. But this was merely a mistake in pronunciation; and I will not permit myself to question, that he had real science enough to have smelt out Moliere's jest about a *demi-lune*, and a *lune toute entière*.

In the course of some weeks, our labours had produced immense mounds of earth, assuming a pentagonal form, and finally issuing in a fort of five bastions. As Cæsar, in his operations, has been said to have made great use of the spade, I shall not insist upon the *improbus labor* being beneath the dignity of a soldier; but certain it is, that we then thought it so, and that the continual fatigue-duty we were subjected to was not only extremely irksome, but unfavourable also to our improvement in tactics, which, nevertheless, was assiduously attended to. The perpetual clouds of dust which the dry weather of the season occasioned gave us the appearance of scavengers; a circumstance sadly at variance with the neatness of person inculcated by Colonel Shee, and of which he was an enthusiastic admirer; it made our duty also extremely severe, and gave me an inflammation in my eyes, which was the only indisposition I experienced during the campaign. Sickness, however, on the approach of fall, prevailed among our men to a great degree; and little more than half our number was, at any time, fit for duty. Thus, without fighting, are armies "sluggishly melted away."

One of the chief objects in building Fort Washington is understood to have been, to prevent the enemy passing up the Hudson, on whose eastern bank it stood, on very commanding ground. On the opposite side of the river, Fort Lee, in the same view, was afterwards erected, and these, with the sinking of some hulks in the

channel, were expected, or at least hoped, to be sufficient for the purpose. But the inefficacy of these impediments was soon evinced by two frigates, that, taking advantage of a favourable wind, sailed by us with great gallantry, in English phrase, returning our fire *in great style*. We were too high for their guns to be brought to bear upon us with any certainty, though one ball was thrown into the fort. Our elevated situation was nearly as unfavourable to the success of our fire upon them; to remedy which, in future, a battery was constructed below, in a very advantageous position. But this was attended with no better effect, as two other frigates, not long after, passed in defiance of the guns of both batteries, and apparently without having sustained the slightest injury. I afterwards learned, however, when prisoner in New York, that, upon one of these occasions, one of the frigates had been hulled, and some men killed and wounded, among the latter a midshipman, a son of Mr Courtland Skinner, of Amboy, lost his arm.

To have been regular, I should have mentioned the arrival of the hostile forces, and their occupancy of Staten Island, as a preparatory station. From the uncertainty in what quarter they might invade us, the utmost vigilance was inculcated everywhere, and observed at our post. The lines were manned every morning an hour before daylight; we were several times formed for action, and once marched to Bloomingdale in full expectation of meeting the enemy, who, it was confidently asserted, had made good a landing there, or in the neighbourhood. The intelligence proved untrue, if such, indeed, had been received. But it is not improbable that it was merely a contrivance of General Mifflin, to inure us to alarms, and render us alert, objects that, to

a certain extent, were not without utility; but the General was a bustler, who harassed us unnecessarily; and, considering the unavoidable severity of our duty, to the real injury of the health of the troops. His manners were better adapted to attract popularity than to preserve it. Highly animated in his appearance, and possessing, in an eminent degree, the talent of haranguing a multitude, his services, in giving motion to the militia, were several times, in the course of the war, felt and acknowledged; but, that he was equally calculated to keep alive military ardour and confidence, cannot be affirmed. He was full of activity, and apparently of fire; but it rather resembled the transient blaze of light combustibles, than the constant steady flame of substantial fuel; though, in saying this, it should be mentioned, that I have no ground to insinuate that his fortitude was not equal to any demand that might have been made upon it. He assumed a little of the veteran, from having lain before Boston; was very fond of telling us that he would bring us into a scrape; and it must be confessed, that he was considerably happy in the display of that apathy to human carnage which is affected by great commanders, in the spirit of which the great Frederick tells us, that, "When sovereigns play for provinces, the lives of men are but as counters." So much 'tis better to direct the game than be a component part of its machinery! But whatever might have been Mifflin's deficiencies, he had many qualifications for his station that too many others, placed in higher ones, wanted. He was a man of education, ready apprehension, and brilliancy; had spent some time in Europe, particularly in France; and was very easy of access, with the manners of genteel life, though occasionally evolving those of the Quaker. In delineat-

ing both men and events, my object is truth; otherwise the friendly attention I never failed to receive from this gentleman might have led me into a strain of less qualified encomium.

The first frigates that passed us took their station in Tappan Sea, where an attempt was made to set them on fire. It failed as to the larger vessels, but a tender was destroyed. One of the persons who embarked in this service as a volunteer was the surgeon's mate of our regiment, a singular character, and degenerate son of Mordecai Yarnall, a Quaker preacher. I was amused with his oddities, and sometimes listened to his imitations of his father's manner of preaching, as well as that of many others of the public friends. Though a temporary apostate from the principles of his forefathers, in which he had been strictly brought up, I never doubted that they had taken root in him; and that, if he was not prematurely cut off, they would vegetate and fructify in due season: nor was I mistaken. Many years after, I saw him zealously sustaining his paternal vocation, surrounded by a circle of friends. He had come to preach in the town in which I resided: I went to hear him, and had the pleasure of taking him home with me to dinner with several of his attendants, where every thing passed with as much gravity and decorum, as if I had never seen him in any other character. Mr Yarnall's former profaneness could not but have occurred to him on this occasion; but whatever might have been his recollections, he dissembled them admirably.

Among the military phenomena of this campaign, the Connecticut light horse ought not to be forgotten. These consisted of a considerable number of old-fashioned men, probably farmers and heads of families, as they were ge-

nerally middle-aged, and many of them apparently beyond the meridian of life. They were truly irregulars; and whether their clothing, their equipments, or caparisons were regarded, it would have been difficult to have discovered any circumstance of uniformity; though in the features derived from "local habitation," they were one and the same. Instead of carbines and sabres, they generally carried fowling-pieces; some of them very long, and such as in Pennsylvania are used for shooting ducks. Here and there, one, "his youthful garments well saved," appeared in a dingy regimental of scarlet, with a triangular, tarnished, laced hat. In short, so little were they like modern soldiers, in air or costume, that, dropping the necessary number of years, they might have been supposed the identical men who had in part composed Pepperil's army at the taking of Louisbourg. Their order of march corresponded with their other irregularities. It "spindled into longitude immense," presenting so extended and ill-compacted a flank, as though they had disdained the adventitious prowess derived from concentration. These singular dragoons were volunteers, who came to make a tender of their services to the commander-in-chief. But they staid not long at New York. As such a body of cavalry had not been counted upon, there was, in all probability, a want of forage for their *jades*, which, in the spirit of ancient knighthood, they absolutely refused to descend from; and as the general had no use for cavaliers in his insular operations, they were forthwith dismissed with suitable acknowledgments for their truly chivalrous ardour. * An

* It appears from a letter of General Washington, that they refused fatigue-duty, because it was beneath the dignity of troopers.

unlucky trooper of this school had, by some means or other, found his way to Long Island, and was taken by the enemy in the battle of the 27th of August. The British officers made themselves very merry at his expence, and obliged him to amble about for their entertainment. On being asked, what had been his duty in the rebel army, he answered, that it was *to flank a little, and carry tidings.* Such, at least, was the story at New York among the prisoners.

But notwithstanding the unwarlike guise of the troops from New England, there was no part of the continent, perhaps, in which so little impression could be made, or in which the enemy was so cautious of advancing. Their numbers and zeal rendered them formidable when fighting on their own ground *pro aris et focis;* and pitiful as was the figure the eastern men made this campaign, the defence of Bunker's Hill was worthy of the bravest veterans. I attempt not to assign a cause for the falling off; and should even be fearful of recognising it, were there not documents in existence, and hundreds yet alive to attest the truth of my representations. I have in vain endeavoured to account for the very few gentlemen and men of the world that, at this time, appeared in arms from this country, which might be considered as the cradle of the revolution. There were some, indeed, in the higher ranks; and here and there a young man of decent breeding, in the capacity of an aid de-camp or brigade-major; but any thing above the condition of a clown, in the regiments we came in contact with, was truly a rarity. Was it, that the cause was only popular among the yeomanry? Was it, that men of fortune and condition there, as in other parts of the continent, though evidently most interested in a contest, whose object was

to rescue American property from the grasp of British avidity, were willing to devolve the fighting business on the poorer and humbler classes? Was it, in short, that they held the language of the world, and said,

> Let the gull'd fools the toils of war subdue,
> Where bleed the many to enrich the few?

Or was it, that that simple way of thinking, and ill appreciation of military talent, which had made a drivelling deacon * second in command, was then prevalent among them? Whatever was the reason, New England was far behind the other provinces in the display of an ardent, unequivocal zeal for the cause, in the quality of her officers; and notwithstanding that she has since shown herself more prolific of liberal, well-informed, exigent men, than any other part of the union, her soldiery, at the time I am speaking of, was contemptible in the extreme.

Neither did the fighting department appear to be fashionable among the gentry of Virginia. It must be admitted that she furnished some gentlemen aid-de-camps and volunteers, and afterwards corps of cavalry, respectably officered; but the serious, drudging business of war devolves on the infantry; and in this description of force she evinced but little brilliancy. One of her regiments, I recollect, did duty with us when we were encamped on Haerlem Heights. Its commander had the appearance of a reputable planter, and might, for any thing I know to the contrary, have been both patriotic

---

* This was General Ward, with whose resignation and that of Brigadier Fry, General Washington makes himself merry in a letter to General Lee, published in the memoirs of the latter. So little does the character of the time appear to be known at present, that I deem it necessary to fortify my remarks.

and brave; but neither himself nor his officers were of the kind that bespoke the *elite* of their country: they were not in the style of their vocation; in a word, they were not Baylors, nor Griffins, nor Lees, nor Monroes. But allowing every possible merit to these gentlemen, it does not lessen the force of my observation in respect to their state, of whose subsequent exertions I am ignorant.

// Among the mistakes of my life, in a view to advancement, I may justly reckon my not essaying the aid-de-camp career. To the rank and pay of major, which followed the appointment, an exemption from hard duty immediately took place, and the fortunate incumbents had cause to hug themselves in a world of other pleasant consequences. They, comparatively, fed well and slept well; used horses' legs instead of their own upon a march; and were, besides, in the true road to preferment. The late General Walter Stewart was a younger captain than myself, in the same regiment. But he chose the better path I allude to: in doing so, he escaped captivity, was warmly recommended to congress by his General, and complimented with a regiment, while his elder officers were languishing in captivity, neglected, superseded, and forgotten. Captain Scull, also of our regiment, had attached himself to General Thomson; and the colonels fearing they should lose more of us, were assiduous in representing the employment of an aid, as not only unworthy of a man of spirit, but as being out of the line of promotion: in the latter, at least, they were egregiously mistaken.\\

The declaration of independence, whose date will never be forgotten so long as liberty remains the fashion, and demagogues continue to thrive upon it, was, with the utmost speed, transmitted to the armies; and,

when received, read to the respective regiments. If it was not embraced with all the enthusiasm that has been ascribed to the event, it was, at least, hailed with acclamations, as, no doubt, any other act of congress, not flagrantly improper, would at that time have been. The propriety of the measure had been little canvassed among us; and perhaps it was to our honour, considered merely as soldiers, that we were so little of politicians. A predilection for republicanism, it is true, had not reached the army, at least the Pennsylvania line; but as an attempt to negotiate, in our unorganized situation, would probably have divided and ruined us, the step was considered wise, although a passage of the Rubicon, and calculated to close the door to accommodation. Being looked upon as unavoidable, if resistance was to be persisted in, it was approved; and produced no resignations among the officers that I am aware of, except that of Lieutenant-Colonel William Allen, already mentioned, who was with his regiment in Canada. He called at our camp on his way to Philadelphia, where he appeared somewhat surprised and mortified, that his example had no followers.

Being now independent, we had no further use for a king, or even the semblance of one; for which reason, the equestrian statue of George the Third in New York was thrown down and demolished. The head of the king was cut off by way of inflaming the public valour: but so little was the spirit of seventy-six like the spirit of subsequent eras, that the act was received with extreme coldness and indifference. Had even George himself been among us, he would have been in no great danger of personal injury, at least from the army. We were, indeed, beginning to grow angry with him; and

were not displeased with Paine for calling him a *Royal brute*, but we had not yet acquired the true taste for cutting throats.

The suspense in which we had for many weeks been held, in respect to the meditated operations of the enemy, was at length removed by the landing of a considerable force on the 22d of August on Long Island. Among the measures taken to counteract him, handbills addressed to the German troops, inviting desertion by a promise of land, were prepared by congress, and endeavoured to be circulated among them. For this business, Christopher Ludwig, a baker of Philadelphia, was, among others, selected. As he was a German, and had been a soldier in his younger days, he was supposed to be peculiarly fitted for the purpose. Full of zeal for the cause, he was already at his post, and was bold enough to undertake the perilous employment; but whether he ventured himself in the enemy's camp, I never learned. I rather suspect he was shy, as he well knew the penalty of detection in such an enterprise. At any rate, the overtures had no effect: no deserters came over to us. This Ludwig, though far advanced in years, could yet play the old soldier with much address, and thence contrived to make himself conspicuous. Being employed some time after to manage the ovens, he assumed the title of *Baker Master-General of the Army*, and made a vow never to shave his beard until a fortunate conclusion of the contest. It is a little remarkable, that the patriotism of the baker-general should have displayed itself in the same manner as that of Cato did, during the civil war of Rome, who, as we are informed by Lucan, neither shaved nor combed his hair.

Ut primum tolli feralia viderat arma,
Intonsos rigidam in frontem descendere canos
Passus erat, mœstamque genis increscere barbam.

For when he saw the fatal factions arm,
The coming war, and Rome's impending harm;
Regardless quite of every other care,
Unshorn he left his loose neglected hair,
Rude hung the hoary honours of his head,
And a foul growth his mournful cheeks o'erspread.

The forces of the enemy which had been landed on Long Island had extended themselves as far as Flatbush and New Lots, between which places and our works at Brooklyn runs a ridge of pretty lofty hills. Here it was, that, being met by our troops, under the command of Generals Sullivan and Stirling, the action of the 27th of August commenced; of which, as I was not present, I know nothing more than is given in the historical accounts of this affair. The manifest superiority of the enemy on this occasion, owing more to mismanagement, perhaps, on our side, than want of bravery in the troops engaged, rendered it expedient to draw our forces to the point that had been chosen for the contest; and an express was accordingly sent off, requiring the immediate march of Shee's and Magaw's regiments to New York. Being forthwith put in motion, we proceeded with the utmost speed, and reached the city in the afternoon: but, by this time, the conflict was over, and the firing had ceased. Here, therefore, we were quartered for the night, under orders to be in readiness to cross the East river, by break of day, in the morning. Glover's regiment was also moved to this place, and was under similar orders for Long Island. Few particulars of the day's combat were yet known, though it was pretty well ascertained that we had been

handled severely, and lost a considerable number of officers and men; but what proportion had been killed, or were prisoners, was merely conjecture. New York was, at this time, a scene of tumult and confusion, and, it might be added, of dismay.

The circumstance, however, did not deprive me of my appetite, and the inclination for a good supper, which I had not for some months enjoyed; and, therefore, as soon as our men were dismissed to their quarters, which was not until dark, Mr Forrest and myself set out in pursuit of this object. But some of the public houses were full, others had no eatables in them, and we began to fear, that this little enjoyment we had promised ourselves was not to be obtained, and that we should be obliged to go to bed supperless. After trying the best looking inns to no purpose, we essayed those of more humble appearance, and at length entered one that was kept by a middle-aged matronly lady. We asked if she could give us supper; she gave us the common answer, that there was nothing in the house. We were now about to give the matter up, and had retired beyond the door, with somewhat of a disconsolate air, perhaps, when the good woman seemed touched with compassion for us. She had probably sons of her own; or if not, she was of that sex which, Ledyard tells us, is ever prone to acts of kindness and humanity. She called us back, and told us, that she believed she could make out to give us a lobster. At this we brightened up, assuring her, as we really thought, that nothing could be better: and being shown into a small, snug apartment, we called for a pint of wine. We now thought ourselves, instead of outcasts, favourites of fortune, as, upon comparing notes with our brother officers,

next day, we found we had reason, since scarcely one of them had been able to procure a mouthful. Our lobster being quickly served up, we fell to with most excellent appetites, and between it and our wine entirely forgot our toils, most fervently realising the sentiment of the song, that *a bottle and kind landlady cure all again.*

On the next day, early in the forenoon, we were transported to Long Island; marched down to the entrenchments at Brooklyn, and posted on their left extremity, extending to the Wallabout. The arrival of our two battalions, (Shee's and Magaw's, which always acted together,) with that of Glover, had the effect, I have always found to be produced, by a body of men under arms, having the appearance of discipline. Although, owing to the dysentery which had prevailed in our camp, our number was so reduced, that the two regiments could not have amounted to more than eight hundred men, making in the whole, when joined with Glover's, about twelve or thirteen hundred; yet it was evident that this small reinforcement inspired no inconsiderable degree of confidence. The faces that had been saddened by the disasters of yesterday, assumed a gleam of animation on our approach; accompanied with a murmur of approbation in the spectators, occasionally greeting each other with the remark, that *these were the lads that might do something.* Why it should be so, I know not, but the mind instinctively attaches an idea of prowess to the silence, steadiness, and regularity of a military assemblage; and an hundred well dressed, well armed, and well disciplined grenadiers, are more formidable in appearance than a disjointed, disorderly multitude of a thousand. Our regiments, to be sure, could

not arrogate such perfection; but that they were distinguished in our young army, may be inferred from an official letter from General Washington, wherein he states, that "they had been trained with more than common attention." To sustain the duty now imposed upon us, required both strength of body and of mind. The spot at which we were posted was low and unfavourable for defence. There was a *fraised* ditch in its front, but it gave little promise of security, as it was evidently commanded by the ground occupied by the enemy, who entirely enclosed the whole of our position, at the distance of but a few hundred paces. It was evident, also, that they were constructing batteries, which would have rendered our particular situation extremely ineligible, to say the least of it. In addition to this discomfort, we were annoyed by a continual rain, which, though never very heavy, was never less than a searching drizzle, and often what might, with propriety, be called a smart shower. We had no tents to screen us from its pitiless pelting; nor, if we had had them, would it have comported with the incessant vigilance required, to have availed ourselves of them, as, in fact, it might be said, that we lay upon our arms during the whole of our stay upon the island. In the article of food, we were little better off. We had, indeed, drawn provisions, whose quality was not to be complained of. Our pickled pork, at least, was good; but how were we to cook it? As this could not be done, it was either to be eaten as it was, or not eaten at all; and we found upon trial, that boiling it, although desirable, was not absolutely necessary; and that the article was esculent without culinary preparation. I remember, however, on one of the days we were in this joyless place, getting a slice of a barbacued pig, which

some of our soldiers had dressed at a deserted house which bounded our lines.

There was an incessant skirmishing kept up in the day time between our riflemen and the enemy's irregulars; and the firing was sometimes so brisk, as to indicate an approaching general engagement. This was judiciously encouraged by General Washington, as it tended to restore confidence to our men, and was, besides, showing a good countenance to the foe.

On the morning after our first night's watch, Colonel Shee took me aside, and asked me what I thought of our situation. I could not but say I thought it a very discouraging one. He viewed it in the same light, he said, and added, that, if we were not soon withdrawn from it, we should inevitably be cut to pieces. So impressed was he with this conviction, that he desired me to go to the quarters of General Reed, and to request him to ride down to the lines, that he might urge him to propose a retreat without loss of time. I went, but could not find him at his quarters, or at any of the other places where it was likely he might be. It was not long, however, before he came to our station, and gave the colonel an opportunity of conferring with him. This day passed off like the last, in unabating skirmishing and rain. After dark, orders were received, and communicated to us regimentally, to hold ourselves in readiness for an attack upon the enemy, to take place in the course of the night. This excited much speculation among the officers, by whom it was considered a truly daring undertaking, rendered doubly so from the bad condition of our arms, so long exposed to the rain: and although we had bayonets, this was not the case with the whole of our force, upon whom we must depend

for support. It was not for us, however, to object to the measure: we were soldiers and bound to obey. Several nuncupative wills were made upon the occasion, uncertain as it was, whether the persons to whom they were communicated would survive, either to prove or to execute them. I was for a while under the impression that we were to fight; and, in the language of the poet, was "stiffening my sinews and summoning up my blood," for what, with the rest, I deemed a desperate encounter. But when I came to consider the extreme rashness of such an attempt, it suddenly flashed upon my mind, that a retreat was the object; and that the order for assailing the enemy was but a cover to the real design. The more I reflected upon it, the more I was convinced that I was right; and what had passed in the morning with Colonel Shee, served to confirm me in my opinion. I communicated my conjecture to some of the officers, but they dared not suffer themselves to believe it well founded, though they gradually came over to my opinion; and by midnight they were, for the most part, converts to it. There was a deep murmur in the camp which indicated some movement; and the direction of the decaying sounds was evidently towards the river. About two o'clock a cannon went off, apparently from one of our redoubts, "piercing the night's dull ear," with a tremendous roar. If the explosion was within our lines, the gun was probably discharged in the act of spiking it; and it could have been no less a matter of speculation to the enemy than to ourselves. I never heard the cause of it; but whatever it was, the effect was at once alarming and sublime; and what with the greatness of the stake, the darkness of the night, the uncertainty of the design, and extreme hazard of the issue,

whatever might be the object, it would be difficult to conceive a more deeply solemn and interesting scene. It never recurs to my mind, but in the strong imagery of the chorus of Shakespeare's Henry the Fifth, in which is arrayed, in appropriate gloom, a similar interval of dread suspense and awful expectation.

As our regiment was one of those appointed to cover the retreat, we were, of course, among the last to be drawn off, and it was near day-break before we received orders to retire. We were formed without delay, and had marched near half-way to the river, when it was announced that the British light horse were at our heels. Improbable as was the circumstance, it was yet so strenuously insisted upon, that we were halted and formed, the front rank kneeling with presented pikes, which we had with us, to receive the charge of the supposed assailants. None, however, appeared; and the alarm must have proceeded from the fear of those who gave it, magnifying the noise of a few of our own horsemen into that of squadrons of the enemy. We again took up the line of march, and had proceeded but a short distance, when the head of the battalion was halted a second time. The orders we had received were erroneous: We were informed that we had come off too soon, and were commanded with all expedition to return to our post.* This was a trying business to young soldiers; it was nevertheless strictly complied with, and we remained not less than an hour in the lines before we received the second order to abandon them. It may be supposed we did not

* This is stated in Gordon's History, Vol. II. p. 103, to have been owing to a mistake of Colonel Scammel, who delivered the orders to General Mifflin to bring off the whole covering party, instead of a particular regiment.

linger; but though we moved with celerity, we guarded against confusion, and under the friendly cover of a thick fog, reached the place of embarkation without annoyance from the enemy, who, had the morning been clear, would have seen what was going on, and been enabled to cut off the greater part of the rear. One of my soldiers being too feeble to carry his musket, which was too precious to be thrown away, I took it from him, and found myself able to carry it, together with my own fusee. On attaining the water, I found a boat prepared for my company, which immediately embarked, and taking the helm myself, I so luckily directed the prow, no object being discernible in the fog, that we touched near the centre of the city. It was between six and seven o'clock, perhaps later, when we landed at New York; and in less than an hour after, the fog having dispersed, the enemy was visible on the shore we had left.

Next to the merit of avoiding a scrape in war, is that of a dexterous extrication from it; and in this view, the removal of so great a number of men, stated, I think, at nine thousand, with cannon and stores, in one night, was, no doubt, a masterly movement, though not classible, perhaps, with the great retreats. The Memoirs of the Duke of Sully relate an operation very similar to it, and to which much applause is given. This was achieved by the Prince of Parma, whose army, lying between Rouen and Caudebec, was in the night transported across the Seine, and thus preserved from the destruction that impended from the forces of Henry IV. ready to fall upon it in the morning. "Could it appear otherwise," observes the writer, "than a fable or an illusion? Scarce could the king and his army trust the evidence of their own eyes."

After a comfortable breakfast, which I got at the coffeehouse, I met with Colonel Melchior of the commissary department. Being one of my old and particular Philadelphia acquaintances, he offered me his bed, to repair my want of rest. I had not slept for two nights; and as my brother, a lad of about nineteen, and an ensign in the regiment, had undergone the same fatigue, I took him along with me, and locking the door of the apartment to exclude intruders, we snatched a refreshing nap of five or six hours; after which we felt ourselves alert and ready for the further tasks which duty might impose.

General Washington has been censured for risking his army upon Long Island, and General Howe for permitting it to escape with impunity. Reasoning from the facts which have evolved, the blame in both cases seems to be well founded. But this is not the mode of judging contingent events. In conducting the war on our side, a great variety of interests was to be consulted. Our cities were, if possible, to be maintained, and no property to be sacrificed without the most manifest necessity, lest it might create disgust and disaffection. Congress, also, was to be obeyed; in which body, no doubt, there was enough of local feeling. Hence, New York must be defended; and if so, there was nothing wrong in risking an action on Long Island; it was even better than awaiting it in the city. Add to this, that the combatants had not yet measured arms with each other; and General Washington was not without ground for hope, that his troops would prove equal to the invaders. He knew the British were not invincible. He had even seen them panic-struck under Braddock and Dunbar, and was aware of their having been staggered

by a handful of irregulars at Bunker's Hill. But it is sufficient for his exculpation, that the necessity of attempting the defence of New York was too imperious to be dispensed with. Otherwise, there can be no question, that, with the unpromising army he commanded, he should have been extremely cautious of committing himself in insular posts. No general will, of choice, convert his army into a garrison, and invite a siege. Had this been done at New York, General Howe, by blockading it, would soon have reduced us to the necessity of starving, surrendering, or fighting our way out again. A few batteries and redoubts do not render a place capable of sustaining a siege; or had he preferred an assault, what fortifications were there to justify the assertion, that it was tenable for a single day?

As to General Howe, I have scarce a doubt that he might have carried the entrenchments at Brooklyn, and cut off the troops posted there. Even, without intercepting, with his ships of war, the passage of East river, the retreat across it would have been sufficiently difficult and tardy, to have rendered the loss of much the greater portion of our army inevitable. That the works would have been well defended, and cost him a great many men, can neither be affirmed nor denied. The feelings of raw troops are too uncertain to be calculated upon; and considering what had recently happened, it is rather to be presumed, that the defence would not have been obstinate. But General Howe, it should be remembered, was yet a stranger to our circumstances and the character of our force. Though he had just vanquished a part of it in the open field, the remainder was behind entrenchments, supported by redoubts; and he had cause for being cautious from what had happened at

Bunker's Hill. Besides, he probably reasoned as we at first did, that our losses might be more easily supplied than his own; and from the boldness of Congress in declaring independence in defiance of the concentrated power of Britain, he had certainly grounds to conclude, that their resources were great, and their army extremely numerous. In addition to these considerations he had no reason to calculate on our precipitate retreat. He was preparing to attack us under the cover of batteries; and, in that case, might have been enabled to destroy the rear of our force with little loss to himself. It must, however, be admitted, that the character of Sir William's generalship rather savoured of caution than enterprise.

CHAPTER VII.

Americans abandon New York, and take Post at Fort Washington—Character of American Officers—Promotions—The Post at Fort Washington threatened—Summoned by General Howe—The Americans attacked and retire—Account of the Engagement.

On the thirty-first of August, the day after the retreat from Long Island, we marched beyond Kingsbridge towards the Sound, and, crossing the Brunx, encamped about eighteen or twenty miles from the city of New York. I say encamped, though, in fact, we had no canopy but the sky, and nothing between our bodies and the earth but the clothes we had on, and the blanket which each of us carried along with him. We might, however, have lodged comfortably on the green sward, had not the imaginations of some of our party been still haunted by light horse; an alarm having been given in the night, whether in jest or earnest, I cannot say, that they had assailed us again. But it turned out to be nothing more than the scampering of a few colts, that were probably equally alarmed at seeing so many two-legged intruders extended on their feeding grounds.

My memory does not enable me to say how long we remained at this place; but I recollect we were soon joined by a portion of the army, among which was the regiment of Hazlet from Delaware. When the post

was sufficiently strengthened to observe the motions of the enemy hovering in the Sound, and threatening the country about Frogs Point, we retook our old ground at Fort Washington. While here, we acted in detachment at Morrisania, then menaced by a body of the British, which had been thrown into Buchanan's and Montezore's Islands, lying in the mouth of Haerlem river, within two hundred or an hundred and fifty yards of the main land. I recollect, at least, that their centinels appeared to be within gunshot, and that one day I had considerable difficulty in restraining Captain Miller of Magaw's regiment, who carried a rifle, from shooting one of them, which he had no doubt he could do. This was a kind of warfare which appeared to me both cruel and useless; and I reprobated it so earnestly, that, for this time, I turned Miller from his purpose. But the carrying a rifle is too apt to create an appetite for the savage mode of warfare which does its work in concealment; and makes a merit of destroying the enemy whenever and wherever he may be found.

At the time of these movements, the main army very improperly still lingered at New York. There cannot remain a doubt, that this city should have been evacuated, as soon as possible, after the quitting of Long Island. This was as obvious to me then as it is now, and I had backed my opinion with the bet of a beaver hat, that there would be no attempt to defend it. It appears from documents since published, that it was the opinion of the commander-in-chief, that it should be abandoned, as well as of other officers in whom he principally confided, though not of the majority of the council of war. Not long after, however, the propriety of the measure became so apparent, that it was universally concurred in,

and the place was given up, though not without a considerable loss of stores. Previously to this operation, our numbers had been much reduced by the desertion of great bodies of the militia, and some of the other troops that had been infected by their bad example, as appears from the letters of the general. A greater loss than themselves was that of the arms and ammunition they took away with them. I very well recollect that it was found necessary to post a guard at Kingsbridge to stop the fugitives; and that, upon one of them being arrested with a number of *notions* in a bag, there was found among them a cannon ball, which, he said, he was taking home to his mother, for the purpose of pounding mustard. Such was the story; and though I was not a witness of the fact, I can vouch for its being entirely in character. An instance of shameful cowardice was also given by Parson's and Fellow's brigades, (in which their generals, however, were not implicated,) as mentioned in an official letter of the 16th of September. On this occasion, I have understood that the general lost all patience, throwing his hat upon the ground in a transport of rage and indignation. A day or two after this dastardly affair, better conduct was shown by some companies of Colonel Weedon's regiment from Virginia, and some rangers, composed of volunteers from different New England regiments, under the command of Major Leitch and Colonel Knolton, both of whom were mortally wounded.

The army now took a position upon the high grounds surrounding Fort Washington, comprehending the Heights of Haerlem and the difficult Pass towards Kingsbridge. A double row of lines was thrown up, nearly extending from Haerlem river to the Hudson, on

the south, looking towards New York, of which General Howe was now in possession. General Washington appears to have had a good opinion of this post; but, though certainly strong by nature, and improved by entrenchments in its most accessible parts, its eligibility for any other purpose than that of a temporary encampment was very questionable. It was liable to the same objection as the posts of Brooklyn and New York. It was only open to the country on the side of Kingsbridge; and, consequently, the slightest demonstrations of the adversary, in that quarter, must have induced its abandonment, unless we should have been disposed for an encounter of similar difficulties to those from which we were just extricated, and again trying the fortune of an escape across a river under the very paws of the enemy. But the idea, about this time, seems to have been taken up of making our resistance *a war of posts*; or of disputing, inch by inch, our ground. This sort of war, however, when referring to the operations of a weaker army, in a country without regular fortresses, appears to be scarcely practicable, unless it should have the good fortune to be protected by a succession of Thermopylæ. There are few posts which may not be turned and blockaded by a superior force; and the experience of a campaign is sufficient to evince the fallacy of supposing a position to be good, merely because its approaches are difficult. The impropriety of remaining in the present one was immediately perceived by Lee, who joined us about the middle of October. He declared at once against the policy of having any thing to do with the islands, about which we had been clinging so pertinaciously; and with a figure somewhat too bold for the genius of our patriot-

ism, exclaimed, that "he would give Mr Howe a *fee-simple* in them."

But before we permit ourselves to arraign the conduct of the commander-in-chief, we ought to obtain a clear idea of what his operations should have been. Because inferior to the foe, was he, therefore, to have kept at an awful distance from him? Would this have satisfied the country, or promoted the cause it had in hand? It had been buoyed up into an exalted opinion of its prowess; and thence expected fighting, if not victories. To have wholly shunned the conflict, then, would have been a confession of a weakness, which, as the people were not prepared for, it was dangerous to expose. It would have been too sudden a descent from the high ground of independence.

About the middle of October, General Howe, having drawn his main body to Frogs Point, the immediate necessity of a removal of our army from its present post became apparent, and was resolved on accordingly. It is not to be supposed, without ascribing an extreme want of discernment to our councils, but that the danger of remaining on a strip of land, embarrassed by the Hudson and the Sound, must have been perceived, and duly estimated, before the arrival of General Lee. Nevertheless, it seems to have been considered, that, by hovering about New York, restricting the limits of the enemy, and thereby obliging him to have recourse to counteracting movements, the campaign might be consumed in fruitless operations. This mode of proceeding, extremely perilous, and only harassing to ourselves, may, probably, be referred, in part, to a proud military spirit, which could not brook the supposed disgrace of flying before the foe, and, in part, to that prime source of our disas-

ters, short enlistments and the militia system. For want of a permanent established force, which would have placed our cause above the reach of vulgar opinion, the public mind was perpetually to be consulted. The popularity of the measure declaratory of independence was suspended on our chance of success; and this would principally be estimated by the ground we maintained or lost. Hence, as every acre had its political value, the defensive warfare, on the large scale, could not safely be adopted; nor, for that reason, can the Fabian fame, of "never having yielded the public safety to clamour," be fully ascribed to General Washington.

While the main army remained at the Heights of Haerlem, a period of five weeks, from about the middle of September to the middle of October, we (Shee's and Magaw's regiments) constituted a part of it, and did duty accordingly. It was my chance to be on guard on the night of the fire at New York, on the piquet advanced about a mile in front of our lines. For a considerable extent, the heavens appeared in flames, and, from the direction of the light, I could not doubt there was a conflagration in the city. I might have been distant from it about nine miles; and had not my situation been overlooked by a hill directly in front, the cause might, perhaps, have been distinctly developed. Whether this fire was produced by accident or design has never, I believe, been ascertained. By the British it was considered as proceeding from us. A few weeks after, having, for some purpose which I do not recollect, been sent, together with Captain Beatty, with a flag, we talked with the officer who met us about the extent of the fire and its cause. He said he was unacquainted with the cause,

but presumed Mr Washington's people knew more about it than they did.

The antipathy prevailing between the southern and eastern troops had been the cause of a court-martial, of which I was a member, upon the conduct of Lieutenant Stewart, of Smallwood's regiment, better known by his subsequent title of Major Jack Stewart. He had been arrested by General Silliman, on account of some alleged disrespect or disobedience to that officer. As the majority of the court were southern men, it was not at all wonderful that Stewart was soon acquitted with honour. In so contemptible a light were the New England men regarded, that it was scarcely held possible to conceive a case which could be construed into a reprehensible disrespect of them. Thinking so highly as I now do of the gentlemen of this country, the recollection is painful; but the fact must not be dissembled. Even the celebrated General Putnam, riding with a hanger belted across his brawny shoulders, over a waistcoat without sleeves, (his summer costume,) was deemed much fitter to head a band of sickle-men, or ditchers, than musketeers. He might be brave, and had certainly an honest manliness about him; but it was thought, and, perhaps, with reason, that he was not what the time required. We had a regular army to oppose, and this could only be done by discipline and regular soldiership. Neither did General Greene himself shine with all the *eclat* that his character has since deservedly acquired.

There were none, by whom an unofficer-like appearance and deportment could be less tolerated than by a city-bred Marylander, who, at this time, was distinguished by the most fashionably-cut coat, the most *macaroni* cocked hat, and hottest blood in the Union; if there

was any exception, it was to be found among the children of the sun of a still more southern location. Among all these the point of honour was maintained, as it still seems to be, with considerable punctilio; and the dashing manner of Stewart, and indignant tone of Captain Smith, (now General Smith,) who testified in his behalf, impressed the court, I remember, with an high idea of their military qualities: and brave men they certainly were—a praise, indeed, due to the officers from Maryland generally, as well as to those of Smallwood's battalion, which behaved well and suffered severely on Long Island and at White Plains. Its officers exhibited a martial appearance by a uniform of scarlet and buff; which, by the bye, savoured somewhat of a servility of imitation, not fully according with the independence we had assumed. The common soldiers from the east and south did not much better assimilate than the officers; but a traffic was soon established between the former and the Pennsylvanians. This consisted in a barter of the ration of rum for that of molasses. The Yankees did not care for the first, and our Irishmen could very well dispense with the latter. It has been supposed that the Pennsylvania line consisted chiefly of Irish, but this would by no means appear from my company. Out of seventy-three men, I find there were twenty from Ireland, four from England, two from Scotland, two from Germany, and the remaining forty-five were Americans. To these, adding four American officers, the proportion of Irish is but little more than a fourth.

The official letters of General Washington ascertain the movement of the army towards White Plains to have commenced on the twentieth of October. We were

very desirous of being attached to it, both for the sake of variety, and the better opportunity of seeing service and acquiring distinction; but to our extreme chagrin, found that we were to remain in our prison. It was, perhaps, supposed we had an affection for the work of our hands; but if so, nothing could be more erroneous. We were weary of the sameness of garrison duty, which, from the great extent of ground we had to guard, became very severe. It was not unusual for a captain to be on guard twice a-week, and a subaltern oftener.

Our battalion was now commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Cadwalader; Colonel Shee having, before the march of the army, obtained leave of absence to visit his family, and converted that leave into an entire abdication of his command. This was certainly an extraordinary incident, and one I have never heard accounted for. Whatever cause he might have had for disgust, or for conceiving that our affairs were tending to ruin, his duty seemed too imperious to be relinquished; and when Colonel Cadwalader acquainted some of us with his suspicion, and indeed conviction, that he would not return, we were truly astonished. But though I attempt not to apologize for his conduct, I must say, that he had some useful talents for the command of a regiment. He was remarkably attentive to the necessary accommodations of every kind, whether of food, clothing, tents, arms, or accoutrements; indefatigable in his endeavours to promote discipline, and even enthusiastic in what regarded the neatness and soldier-like appearance of the corps. He was, moreover, gentlemanly and agreeable in his manners. Whether his promptness in discerning difficulties overmatched his fortitude in sustaining them, I venture not to say; but he left us in the manner

stated. Mr Shee is no longer in a situation to be hurt by a recognition of his delinquency, if such it was; nor is it mentioned from a disrespect to his memory. Such a motive I disclaim. With me he was ever friendly, and free from party rancour; personally, I liked the man, and accepted his civilities, which I never failed to receive on meeting him in Philadelphia.

An event, that took place a few weeks after the retirement of the colonel, had almost tempted some of us to follow his illaudable example. The committee, or council of safety, as it was now called, had undergone a regeneration; and consisted, with perhaps an exception or two, of a new set of members. Persons acquainted with the genius of liberty will not be surprised at this. To borrow the language of French paradox, there is nothing permanent in a revolution but change. In the auction of popularity, the bid is ever more attended to than the inclination or ability to pay; and the most boldly-dashing patriot is ever the most successful one. So it proved in the council. New men, inflated with a little brief authority, are always glad of an occasion for displaying their consequence; and partial to the source from whence they derive their importance, they are ever ready to recognise aristocratic oppression. In this spirit, they lent an ear to all the idle ill-founded reports of the cowardly, skulking soldiers, who, under the pretence of sickness or otherwise, had found their way to Philadelphia. These fellows told the council that their captains had cheated them, and the council, without inquiry, seemed to take the matter as proved. They, accordingly, wrote an illiberal letter to Colonel Cadwalader on the subject, which he thought it his duty to lay before us, though despising the low spirit that had dic-

tated it. In addition to this affront, this same body, who still retained the power of appointment to military command, went on in the manufacture of majors and colonels, in utter disregard of the claims of the officers in service, and, sometimes, from the coarsest materials. An hour's visit to the camp seemed to have more merit, in their eyes, than daily and nightly duty in it; and a little self-puffing, with due incense, could hardly fail to propitiate these great dispensers of commissions. One instance of their propensity to make promotions occurred in the case of an adjutant, who had been enclosed by the Hessians in the battle of Long Island. He contrived to conceal himself in the woods till dark, when, from his understanding and speaking German, he was enabled to answer and elude their sentries; and, by so doing, to get back to our lines. For this piece of address, which consisted merely in good hiding and speaking his mother tongue, the council invested him with a *majority*, at once jumping him over the heads of all the captains and subalterns in the line. This adjutant was Mentges, already spoken of as a fencing-master in Philadelphia; and who first appeared there in the less dignified character of a dancer on the stage, a circumstance which rendered his preferment still more galling. I should be unjust, however, if I did not say, that Mentges, though at this time little known, turned out to be an honest, worthy man, attentive to duty, correct in his demeanour, and generally esteemed, though certainly not for talents that could throw others into shade, or justify his irregular advancement.

Conscious of integrity, soured by hard duty, and smarting under the reflection, that while we were sustaining the severest privations, the very men, who im-

puted fraud to us, were snug and secure at their firesides, we declared that we would not remain a day longer in a service at once so thankless and preposterous. Colonel Cadwalader, to whom we made the declaration, remonstrated against its rashness, while he admitted the enormity of the provocation. He observed to us, that nothing could justify such a step in the heat of a campaign; that it would ruin us, in the public opinion, and embitter our future lives; that it would recoil upon ourselves, and be an everlasting blister to our sensibility. In short, he said every thing which a sensible, prudent man, acquainted with the world, could say upon the occasion. We felt the full force of his reasoning and acquiesced in it; though I have not an idea that one of us would have put the threat in execution had we been left entirely to ourselves. Our vapouring was the effect of sudden passion, which, at length, vented itself in the following letter, written, and sent off, with nearly as little consideration as we had used in taking up our first resolution:—

"GENTLEMEN,—Were it not that some expressions of resentment are natural to the human mind when it feels itself injured, we should disdain the meanness of telling you, how much we were mortified on seeing your letter to Colonel Cadwalader, containing your illiberal charge against the captains of his battalion, of withholding the pay due to their men.

"For the same reason, we cannot forbear mentioning our dissatisfaction at the late appointments and promotions, wherein some, that have never been in service, are preferred to those who have undergone the toils and dangers of a severe campaign, and others, of

an inferior rank, to those of a superior, without any proof, or, as we presume, suggestion of misbehaviour in the latter.

"As to the accusation of fraud! we are above it. We mean not a vindication: to attempt it would betray a meanness which might almost justify the base suspicion. In a word, we deny the charge, and rest perfectly easy under a consciousness that it cannot be supported.

"As to the promotions, we shall only say, that the man, who feels no indignity upon such occasions, wants an essential qualification for a soldier, and is, in our opinion, unworthy to bear a commission.

"But do not imagine, gentlemen, by this, that we are envious of superior merit. For our parts, we pretend to very little; and in any other service, for merit is rated by comparison, we should think ourselves inadequate to our present appointments. We entered into the army not for pay or preferment, but to serve our country to the best of our poor abilities: 'Tis this alone which keeps us in it at this hour, as we conceive, and in so doing, we hope we may not incur the imputation of vanity, that, notwithstanding the insignificance of our services, the cause, as well as our honour, might suffer from our resignations. However, we mean not to continue in the army, nor do we intend to accept of commissions on the new establishment; and it is a matter of the utmost indifference to us how soon the council of safety may take it into their heads to appoint others more to their satisfaction, in the room of,

GENTLEMEN,

"Your most obedient servants."

This angry epistle was signed, I think, by five of us.

We heard no more of it; but, in the sequel, we had reason to wish that it never had been written; and were convinced that silence, under suffering, is generally, if not always, wise.

The *denouement* of the drama, in which we were acting a part, was now rapidly approaching. After the action of White Plains, of which, as I was not there, I shall say nothing, General Howe, with his army, was falling down upon our post; and we had little doubt that his object was to invest it without delay. On receipt of this intelligence Colonel Cadwalader proposed to me to walk with him to the fort, (for we were now stationed in the lines of Haerlem Heights,) that we might endeavour, by an examination of its means of defence, to collect whether it could be the design to hold it. We went and reconnoitered it, and the result was, that it was absolutely untenable, and must be abandoned; though still, all the measures taking seemed to point to a defence. I will not undertake minutely to describe the situation of the fort, as my memory might not enable me to do it truly. But I recollect, as it has been observed by General Lee, that there were no barracks, or casemates, or fuel, or water, within the body of the place. It was an open earthen construction, with ground at a short distance on the back of it, equally high, if not higher; without a ditch of any consequence, if there was a ditch at all; no outworks, an incipient one on the north, not deserving the appellation, or any of those exterior multiplied obstacles and defences, that, so far as I can judge, could entitle it to the name of a fortress, in any degree capable of sustaining a siege. It required no parallels to approach it; the citadel was at once within reach of the assailants. In addition to this, there

were no magazines of any kind prepared; and it is stated in the *Annual Register*, which carried on the history of the war, that, with its other deficiencies, there was not found in it ammunition adequate to the shortest defence. Yet it was to be defended, as will soon appear: And Gordon, in his history, gives a letter from Colonel Magaw, stating that he could hold out until the latter part of December, an opinion which shows him to have been more miserably deficient in judgment than ever we supposed him to be. He had heard of sieges being protracted for months and even years; he had a good opinion of the spirit of his garrison; and, as the place he had to defend was called a fort, and had cannon in it, he thought the deuce was in it if he could not hold out a few weeks. Such, probably, were the *data* of his calculation; nor, though friendly to the memory of a sincere and gallant man, can I suppose them a jot better.

While we remained in this incertitude in respect to our destination, and the main armies were manœuvring above us about the Brunx, Lord Percy, who commanded the British troops on York Island, thought proper, one day, to appear in force in the plains of Haerlem, lying between his and our advanced posts. It was on Sunday, the day his lordship was supposed to prefer for his military operations. As we were both too insignificant, and too distant to admit the supposition that it was intended as a diversion in favour of General Howe, his object probably was to put our countenance to the test; to feel our pulse, and if he found it tremulous, to push us into the fort. But, on the other hand, if he found it full and regular, it was only to bluster a while with his artillery; skirmish a little with his small arms

and retire. This was all, at least, that came of a very pompous display. We had one field-piece with which we answered his fire; and from the carcase of a white horse, which was left bleaching on the ground he occupied, we had satisfactory evidence that our balls had reached him. It was not our business to quit the high ground in force, although some of our men were permitted to skirmish with the light parties which approached us. The firing was pretty warm, and a few men killed and wounded on either side. An Irish lad of about eighteen, who belonged to my company, killed a British soldier and brought off his arms; which, on the evening parade, were formally presented to him by Colonel Cadwalader in reward of his bravery. History has preserved no record of this affair, which, trifling as it was, is as well deserving of memorial as many others, that have been preserved in the transactions of our *petite guere*. Had it passed between the grand armies, it would, without doubt, have been taken notice of; but as it did not, we are reduced to the unfortunate situation of Sir John Falstaff at the battle of Shrewsbury, in being obliged, though late, to attend to its booking ourselves. The celebrated Thomas Paine, however, happened to witness the proceeding from Fort Lee, and gave us an handsome puff in one of the Philadelphia papers of the day.

Another affair, which never got beyond the precincts of our secluded position, was the carrying a Hessian picquet on the side of Kingsbridge. This was achieved by one of our serjeants and a few men, but three or four days before we were taken. The officer of the guard was killed; and the serjeant, with the savage ex-

ultation of one of Homer's heroes, appeared in his uniform on the parade.

It was now November, and the nights becoming cold. It was the season, too, for north-easterly storms, one of which is rendered memorable to me, from a circumstance of some interest which accompanied it. I was upon guard with Lieutenant Davidson, of our battalion, at a place distinguished by the appellation of *The Point of Rocks*, which skirted the road leading to Kingsbridge. This was our most advanced picquet towards New York, and only separated from that of the enemy by a valley a few hundred yards over. The night, as already mentioned, was extremely raw, rainy, and tempestuous; and the only shelter the spot afforded was an old caboose, which had been placed here by way of guard-house. A kind of chimney had been built at the mouth of it, and a fire here, in calm weather, rendered it tolerably comfortable; but at this time, the smoke produced and driven into the cabin by the storm could not be endured; neither was the shelter from the driving rain by any means sufficient; we were dripping wet. In this miserable situation, Davidson proposed our going to a deserted house on the low ground directly across the road, where we could have a fire, and be dry and comfortable. But this I refused to do, since, though not more than thirty or forty yards from our post, and though rather an extension than a dereliction of it, yet it varied the station as to ourselves. The non-commissioned officers and the rest of the guard were, indeed, to remain there; but, in case of disaster, there would be blame, and the responsibility was upon us, and particularly upon myself. In this resolution, I for a long time persisted against the re-

peated importunities of my companion, who ingeniously obviated my objections, until at length, the storm rather increasing than abating, I consented, about midnight, to go to the house, first taking the precaution to continue the line of sentinels from the point of rocks across the road, and round the building at some distance from it, so that it was impossible it should be approached by the enemy unperceived, should he endeavour to grope his way into unknown hostile ground, in one of the darkest and most dismal nights that can be conceived. We had located ourselves in an outer room, where we had a good fire, and had already pretty well dried ourselves. Davidson was stretched along a bench fixed to the wall, half asleep, if not wholly so, and I was sitting before the fire, when a sudden noise of feet and voices reached the door. The latch was lifted, and as I rose up, not without considerable alarm, the first object that presented itself was a British soldier, with his musket and fixed bayonet in his hand. "Who are you?" said I, "a deserter!"—"No deserter," was the answer. My emotion did not prevent my preserving a pretty good countenance, though my first impression was, that we were surprised, and should be bayoneted out of hand. But this idea was scarcely formed, when the appearance of one of my own men behind the British soldier changed it to a more pleasing one, and justified, if it did not induce, the addition of the term *deserter* to the question of *who are you?* In fact, he was a deserter; but, though in the very act of committing the crime, he revolted against its opprobrium. I understood him, and softened down the ungraciousness of my salutation, by asking him if he had come over to us. He answered, "Yes." Our sentinel had done his duty but awkwardly, in not having disarm-

ed the soldier, and introduced him in a less questionable shape.

The bustle of the incident having completely roused Davidson, and set him upon his legs, we fell to questioning our refugee. He called himself Broderick, was an intelligent fellow, and brought with him the last newspaper from New York. He had for some time, he said, projected coming over to us, and had availed himself of this stormy night to put his design in execution. By means of the darkness, he had been enabled to separate himself from his comrades without their perceiving it, and had probably got to our sentries before they discovered him to be gone. He informed us that we might expect to be attacked in six or eight days at farthest, as some time had been employed in transporting heavy artillery to the other side of the Haerlem, and as the preparations for the assault were nearly completed. Among other things, he told us, that our situation at this house was a very unsafe one, as their patroles, still speaking as a Briton, passed very near it, and might easily sweep us off; and, indeed, he appeared uneasy at the idea while he staid with us. This was not long. I put him under the care of a trusty serjeant, with orders to guard him vigilantly, and to take him to head-quarters as soon as it should be light enough to find the way there. The hint we had received, in regard to the enemy's proximity, and, still more, our own knowledge of the comparative insecurity of our present station with the one we had left, induced us to return to the latter, *maugre* the comforts of a snug room and good fire. We accordingly drew in our sentinels, and repaired to the caboose, where we weathered out the remainder of the night, by this time pretty far advanced.

The deserter's information turned out to be correct, as in not more than eight or ten days, I think, Colonel Magaw, the commandant of the fort, was summoned by General Howe to surrender it. He returned the usual answer, that he would defend it to the last extremity. This was announced us at evening parade by Colonel Cadwalader, who, in a few words, put us in mind of what our country and our honour demanded of us, and enjoined it both on officers and men to see that their arms and ammunition were in order, and to hold themselves in readiness to take their posts before day-light next morning. The plan of defence adopted by Colonel Magaw was, instead of cooping up his garrison in the fort, to draw it out into the post which had been occupied by the main army. This consisted of the strong grounds towards Kingsbridge on the north; the elevated, steep, and rocky bank of Haerlem river on the east; and the entrenchments on the south; the western limit, or rear of the position, being the Hudson river, commanded to a certain extent by Forts Washington and Lee on either side. Although I have always supposed that this post would require at least ten thousand men for its support, perhaps, in that number, I am much below the mark, as I find it stated by the King of Prussia, in his History of the Seven Years' War, that sixteen thousand men were very inadequate to the defence of Berlin, three miles in circumference, say nine or ten of our miles. * Now, the circuit to be defended by Magaw

* A case, perhaps still more in point, occurred during the same war, when General Fonquet, with ten thousand six hundred and eighty men, undertook to defend the post of Landshut, at which there were redoubts, against General Laudohn with an army of

was scarcely less, if I have not much forgotten its dimensions, than four or five miles: the scale in the map of Chief-Justice Marshall's Life of Washington would make it not less than seven; and to do this, he had *nominally* something more than two thousand soldiers, *really* little more than half their number: For I cannot set any great value upon the militia poured in upon us, on the evening before, and on the morning of the engagement. My complaisance to the sovereign people will not carry me so far, as to compliment them with being soldiers without an iota of discipline, or ever having seen an enemy, even though every tenth man among them were a Cæsar in valour, or a Cato in patriotism. Several individuals, however, of this description of force behaved bravely.

I cannot give a stronger proof of my ill opinion of the fort, than when I say, that of the alternatives presented to Colonel Magaw, of confining his defence to it, or of extending his operations to so large a circuit, he adopted the right one in choosing the latter. It might indeed be made a question, whether the defence should not have been restricted to the oblong hill on which the fort

---

thirty-four thousand men. A particular account of this is to be found in the 13th volume of the King of Prussia's Works. The force of Fonquet was deemed wholly insufficient, as there were intervals of ground, of two thousand paces or more, left undefended. —We had intervals, perhaps proportionably large, that we were unable to man; hence, if General Fonquet received the warmest approbation of the king, his master, for his unsuccessful attempt, (for he was beaten and made prisoner,) it is surely unnecessary for the American historian to seek an apology for the loss of Fort Washington in the rawness of some of the troops to whom its defence was committed.

was erected: But this ground being considerably weaker than that of the banks of the Haerlem, (taking the river into consideration,) the temptation to prefer the latter both for this reason, and because it had somewhat of the advantage of an outwork, in keeping the assailants at a distance, always a *desideratum* with the besieged, might have prevailed with a more experienced commander than Magaw. I have no doubt, however, that the works and defences of the fortress should have comprehended the whole of this hill, called Mount Washington, in which case, with adequate preparation and magazines, it might have stood a siege.* There was yet another mode which would, in some degree, have contracted the position: and this was, instead of manning the outer entrenchments towards New York, to have placed the men in the inner one, and upon the high grounds about Colonel Roger Morris's house. This would have shortened the front on Haerlem river, and by more compacting the force, have put its several parts into a better condition of mutual succour and support. But, besides that this disposition would not have very considerably abridged the circuit to be defended, and that it might have been liable to some positive objections, I am not aware of, the *desideratum* already adverted to would naturally induce a preference of the further lines; and no doubt the calculation was, that, after fighting to the utmost in the first,

* Mr Stedman, in his history of the war, blames Colonel Magaw for suffering his men, upon being driven from their outposts, to crowd into the fort, instead of forming upon this hill: But, improperly, I presume, as the Hessians must have been in possession of the north end of the hill, as soon as Rawlins was driven from it.

we might fight again in the second. In fact, the idea of taking an extensive range, and equally resisting in every part the compression to the centre, the effect and advantage of regular fortifications sufficiently manned, is extremely plausible and seducing; insomuch, that none but an old general, who has been taught, by long experience, to know the importance of adhering to rules of proportion, as well in the management of animate as inanimate machinery, will have the boldness to disregard it. Whether these two last schemes of defence, or either of them, occurred to our commander, I do not know; but if they did occur, they were probably contemplated as dernier resorts, or efforts in reserve, which it would be time enough to employ, when our first exertions should have been overpowered. The same reasoning might have induced General Greene to suppose, that, after slaughtering a host of the enemy, we might methodically withdraw into the citadel of Fort Washington: and then, provided each of us had killed his man, and thus fulfilled the object of the operation, if any object it had, we might have been snugly slipped over the Hudson, as erst we had been over the East river. But *in bello non licet bis errare*,—we should beware of repeating a mistake in war; and how this fine project was marred, and the garrison put *hors de combat*, will now be seen. I repeat, however, that the error was in attempting to defend the place, not in the disposition of the troops, which, all things considered, was, perhaps, as advantageous as possible.

But, supposing Fort Washington tenable, "what single purpose," as it has been observed by General Lee, "did it answer to keep it?" Did it cover,—did it protect a valuable country? Did it prevent the ene-

my's ships from passing and repassing with impunity?" No; but we had been too much in the habit of evacuating posts, and it was high time to correct the procedure. This garrison must stand, because it had been hitherto too fashionable to run away; and Pennsylvania and Maryland must pay for the retreating alacrity of New England.* If any thing better can be made of General Greene's motives for retaining the post, as mentioned in General Washington's official letter to Congress, I am willing to take to myself the discredit of perversion. If what I say should be thought to implicate the commander-in-chief, and to impugn his decision, I cannot help it. A good man he undoubtedly was, nor will party malignity be ever able to deprive him of the fame of a truly great one. But my veneration for truth is even greater than that for his character; nor will my admiration of his virtues induce me to say that his military career was without a blemish.

On the sixteenth of November, before day-break, we were at our posts in the lower lines of Haerlem Heights; that is, our regiment and Magaw's, and some broken companies of Miles's, and other battalions, principally from Pennsylvania. This might be called our right wing, and was under the command of Colonel Cadwalader; our left, extending to the Hudson above and on the north side of the fort towards Kingsbridge, was command-

* Once for all, let me be understood as only alluding, in these remarks, to the bad constitution of the New England troops; and by no means to the people generally, who have, no doubt, the means of furnishing as good officers as any other part of the Union. But from their shameful inattention to it this campaign, the southern officers were warranted in their indignation.

ed by Colonel Rawlins of Maryland, who had there his own regiment of riflemen, and probably some other troops; though, as the position was narrow, numbers were not so essential to it as to other parts of the general post. The front, or centre, extending a considerable distance along Haerlem river,* was committed to the militia of the Flying Camp, and Colonel Magaw placed himself in the most convenient station for attending to the whole, having selected one or two officers to assist him, as aids-de-camp. I think it was between seven and eight o'clock when they gave us the first shot from one of their batteries, on the other side of Haerlem river. It was well directed at a cluster of us that were standing together observing their movements; but it fell short by about ten or fifteen yards, and bounded over the spot we had precipitately abandoned. In correcting this error, they afterwards shot too high, and did us no harm; at least, while I remained in this part of the field, which, though enfiladed, or rather exposed in the rear, was too distant to be very seriously annoyed. They had better success in front, killing a man with a cannon-ball belong-

* In calling this the front, I conform to Chief-Justice Marshall's description of the action. As the longest line of the position, it was the front, but seems improperly so called, when it is considered, that, except at its upper extremity, no troops were posted on it. It would be more correct, therefore, to consider the posts, the one crossing the island on the north, under Colonels Rawlins and Baxter, and the other on the south, under Colonel Cadwalader, as two distinct and unconnected positions, separated, as they were, by a space of about three miles. This interval, for above half its extent, lying along the banks of the Haerlem, was to depend for defence on casual supplies of troops, as they could be spared, from other places.

ing to our picquets, which they drove in. Soon after, they approached the lines in great force, under cover of a wood, in the verge of which they halted, and slowly began to form, giving us an occasional discharge from their artillery. Tired of the state of suspense in which we had remained for several days, I proposed to Colonel Cadwalader to throw myself, with my company, into a small work, or ravelin, about two hundred yards in advance, for the purpose of annoying them as they came up. To this he assented, and I took possession of it; but found it was a work that had been little more than marked out, not knee high, and, of course, affording no cover. For this reason, after remaining in it a few minutes, with a view to impress my men with the idea that a breastwork was not absolutely necessary, I abandoned it, and returned into the intrenchment. This unimportant movement was treated with some respect. Not knowing its meaning, it induced the troops that were in column immediately to display, and the irregulars to open upon us a scattering fire. Soon after my return to the lines, it being observed that the enemy was extending himself towards the Hudson, on our right, Colonel Cadwalader detached me thither with my company, with orders to post myself to the best advantage for the protection of that flank. I accordingly marched, and took my station at the extremity of the trench, just where the high grounds begin to decline towards the river. This situation, from the intervention of higher land, concealed from my view the other parts of the field; and thence disqualifies me from speaking of what passed there as an eye-witness. But, that the action had begun in earnest, I was, some time after, informed by my sense of hearing. It was assailed by a most tremendous roar of artillery,

quickly succeeded by incessant vollies of small arms, which seemed to proceed from the east and the north; and it was to these points that General Howe chiefly directed his efforts. The direct and cross fire from his batteries, on the east side of the Haerlem, effectually covered the landing of his troops, and protected them also in gaining the steep ascents on our side. It was no disgrace to the militia that they shrunk from this fire; such of them, at least, as were exposed to it without cover. I question whether the bravest veterans could have stood it, unless I am deceived as to the advantage of the ground on which the batteries were erected. When the heights were gained, the enemy planted there must maintain themselves by their small arms, since the artillery from their batteries would be equally fatal to them as to us. On receiving intelligence that embarkations of British troops were about to be thrown across Haerlem river in his rear, Colonel Cadwalader made detachments from his position (already much too weakly manned) to meet this body of the enemy, as yet unopposed by any part of our force. The first detachment arrived in time to open a fire upon the assailants before they reached the shore, and it was well directed and deadly. Nevertheless, their great superiority of force, adequately aided by artillery, enabled them to land, and, by extending themselves, to gain the heights. On this ground it was that a sharp contest ensued; speaking of which, in his official account of the action, General Howe says, "It was well defended by a body of the rebels;" and so it undoubtedly was, when it is considered that but about one hundred and fifty of our men, with a single eighteen-pounder, were opposed by eight hundred British troops, under cover of a battery. But, overpowered by numbers, the resistance was inef-

fectual; and the detachments engaged in it retired towards the fort. Rawlins, on his part, made a gallant stand against the Hessians, under the command of General Knyphausen, to whom had been assigned the perilous glory of gaining this strong piece of ground, differing essentially from that on the borders of Haerlem river, in the want of opposite heights for batteries. The Germans here lost a great many men; but as they had been bought by his Britannic Majesty, he had an unquestionable right to make a free use of them; and this seemed to be the conviction of General Howe. Rawlins also suffered a good deal in proportion to his numbers. He had, I think, two officers killed; and himself, Major Williams, and some others, were wounded; one of whom, a Mr Hanson, died in New York. The attainment of the post of Rawlins put the Hessians in possession of the ground which commanded the fort; as that possessed by the British commanded the open field. Hence, the contest might be said to be at an end.

Colonel Cadwalader, aware that he was placed between two fires; and that the victorious enemy, in his rear, would soon extend themselves across the island, ordered a retreat just in time to prevent his interception.

But I here suspend my own relation for the purpose of introducing a more ample statement of unquestionable authenticity, obligingly furnished by a friend; and which embracing more detail, and mentioning some interesting particulars but little known, will occupy a few pages, much to the advantage of these Memoirs.

"Fort Washington stood on an eminence, situated on the margin of the Hudson, or North river, about two miles and a half below Kingsbridge. The access to

the level on the top of it is steep and difficult on every side, except on the south, where the ground is open, and the ascent gradual to the fort. The hill extends along the North river about half a mile from the fort; and at the termination of it were some small works, which, with the natural strength of the place, were deemed a sufficient protection against the enemy in that quarter.

"Nearly opposite to the fort, on the west side of Haerlem river, a body of men was posted to watch the motions of the enemy, who had erected works on the high and commanding ground east of that river, apparently with the design of covering a landing of troops in that part of the island of New York. From this post, along the west side of Haerlem river, to Colonel Roger Morris's house, a distance of not less than a mile and a half, there were no troops posted either for observation or defence.

"About a mile below Morris's house, two lines, nearly parallel to each other, were constructed by General Washington, when the army retired to the upper part of the island, after the evacuation of New York. These lines extended from the vicinity of Haerlem river, across the island, to the North river, and were in length each about a mile. The first line, towards New York, intersected the great road leading to Kingsbridge, after the height is ascended from Haerlem Plains. It was a slight intrenchment, with a few weak bastions, without platforms for cannon, and furnished with no other ordnance than a few old iron pieces of small calibre, scarcely fit for use, and an iron six-pounder mounted on trucks. The second line was stronger, both from the nature of the ground, which afforded small eminences for bastions closed in the rear, and from having the intervals between

the bastions strongly picketed. These lines were defensive works for the whole American army. The first line seemed calculated rather for retarding the approach of the enemy, than as a seriously defensive work; it being nothing more (with the exception of the bastions) than a shallow ditch, with the earth thrown outwards. The second line was formed at a proper distance from the first, so as to protect the latter by musketry as well as cannon, and to drive out the enemy, should he get possession of it: but this second line, on the day of the attack of Fort Washington, was, from necessity, wholly without defence, either of troops, or artillery of any description.

"A summons having been sent by General Howe, on the day preceding the attack, to Colonel Magaw, to surrender the fort; and having met with a spirited refusal, the attack on the fort, and the posts connected with it, was expected, and actually took place on the following day. Colonel Magaw, who commanded on the island, remained in the fort; Colonel Rawlins, with his regiment of riflemen, was posted on the rear of Mount Washington; Colonel Baxter, with his regiment of militia, on Haerlem river, opposite Fort Washington; and Colonel Lambert Cadwalader, at the first line, about two and a half miles from the fort, with about eight hundred men, including a reinforcement of an hundred militia sent him, about ten or eleven o'clock in the morning.

"The operations of the enemy were announced early in the morning, by a cannonade on Colonel Rawlins' position, and a distant one from the heights of Morrisania, on the line occupied by Colonel Cadwalader; the former with the view of facilitating the attack on that point, by three thousand Hessians; the latter, to favour

the approach of Lord Percy with one thousand six hundred men.

"At ten o'clock in the morning, a large body of the enemy appeared on Haerlem Plains, preceded by their field-pieces, and advanced with their whole body, towards a rocky point of the height, which skirted the plains in a southern direction from the first line, and at a considerable distance from it—and, commencing a brisk fire on the small work constructed there, drove out the party which held it, consisting of twenty men, and took possession of it: the men retiring with the picquet guard to the first line. The enemy, having gained the heights, advanced in column, on open ground, towards the first line; whilst a party of their troops pushed forward, and took possession of a small unoccupied work in front of the first line; from whence they opened their fire with some field-pieces and a howitzer upon the line, but without effect. When the column came within proper distance, a fire from the six-pounder was directed against it; on which the whole column inclined to their left, and took post behind a piece of woods, where they remained. As it was suspected that they would make an attempt on the right of the line, under cover of the wood, that part was strengthened.

"Things remained in this position for about an hour and a half, during which interval, General Washington, with Generals Putnam, Greene, Mercer, and other principal officers, came over the North river from Fort Lee, and crossed the island to Morris's house; from whence they viewed the position of our troops, and the operations of the enemy in that quarter. Having remained there a sufficient time to observe the arrangement that had been made for the defence of that part of

the island, they retired by the way they came, and returned to Fort Lee, without making any change in the disposition of the troops, or communicating any new orders. It is a fact, not generally known, that the British troops took possession of the very spot on which the commander-in-chief, and the general officers with him, had stood, in fifteen minutes after they left it.

"Colonel Rawlins was some time late in the morning attacked by the Hessians, whom he fought with great gallantry and effect, as they were climbing the heights; until the arms of the riflemen became useless, from the foulness they contracted from the frequent repetition of their fire. From this incident, and the great superiority of the enemy, Colonel Rawlins was obliged to retire into the fort. The enemy having gained the heights, immediately pushed forward towards the fort, and took post behind a large store-house, within a small distance of it.

"But to return to what passed at the first line towards New York. Intelligence having been received, by Colonel Cadwalader, that the enemy were coming down Haerlem river in boats, to land on his rear, he detached Captain Lenox with fifty men to oppose them, and, on further information, an hundred more, with Captains Edwards and Tudor.* This force, with the addition of about the same number from Fort Washington, arrived on the heights, near Morris's house, early enough to fire on the enemy in their boats, † which was

* The subalterns, under Captain Lenox, were Lieutenants Lawrence and Tilton, and Ensign M'Intyre—the others are unknown.

† This body from the fort, from the testimony of an eye-witness, and, by permission of the gentleman who furnishes the

done with such effect, that about ninety were killed and wounded. The great superiority, however, of the enemy, (their numbers amounting to about eight hundred men,) prevailed over the bravery and good conduct of our troops, who, with some loss, retired to Fort Washington.

"This body of the enemy immediately advanced, and took possession of the grounds in advance of, and a little below, Morris's house, where some soldiers' huts had been left standing not far from the second line. This position of the enemy being observed, it was expected they would march down and take possession of the second line, (which, from the want of men, was entirely without defence,) and thereby place the troops, in the first line, between two fires. This important movement did not, however, take place; owing, as was afterwards learned, to the apprehension they entertained, that the enclosed bastions concealed therein a number of men whose fire would greatly annoy them. They hesitated; —and this being perceived from the delay that took place, Colonel Cadwalader, to avoid the fatal consequences that must have resulted from the expected movement, immediately resolved to retire to the fort with the troops under his command; and, as the measure required promptness and activity, he sent orders to the right and left of the line to move off towards Fort Washington, on the signal being given; which, after a proper interval of time being made, the whole was put in motion, (those on the left retiring obliquely towards the

---

account, I am authorized to state, did not arrive so early; neither was it engaged. It consisted of the Flying Camp, and could not be brought into action.

centre of the second line,) passed the second line, and, when they came opposite to the body of the enemy posted at the huts, received their fire, which was returned in an irregular manner; and, pursuing the road which led to the fort, under the heights by the North river, arrived there with little or no loss.

"The militia, under Colonel Baxter, posted on Haerlem river, were attacked by the British guards and light infantry, who landed on the island of New York, protected by the fire, from the work on the heights, on the opposite side of the river. A short contest ensued; but our troops, overpowered by numbers, and, leaving behind them Colonel Baxter, who was killed by a British officer as he was bravely encouraging his men, retired to the fort. The guards and light infantry then crossed the island to the heights on the North river, a little below the fort, under which, Colonel Cadwalader with his party, but a few minutes before, had passed in his way to the fort."

CHAPTER VIII.

The Author taken Prisoner—Conduct of British Officers and Soldiers—The Prisoners—Character of General Howe—Prisoners removed to New York.

These things, or the greater part of them, had probably passed before I had abandoned my station, taken, as already mentioned, in pursuance of orders for strengthening the right. The line of intrenchment was too extensive to be manned without leaving intervals. Some of these were large, and intervening hillocks cut off the communication in some parts; otherwise the whole of us, under the command of Colonel Cadwalader, must have retreated at the same time. The first notice that I had of the intrenchment being given up was from an officer I did not know, posted at some distance from me, going off with his men. I called to him to know what he meant. He answered, that he was making the best of his way to the fort, as the rest of the troops had retreated long since. As I had no reason to doubt his veracity, I immediately formed my company, and began to retire in good order, which is more than I can say of my neighbour or his corps; and, amidst all the chagrin I afterwards felt, that the events of the day had been so unpropitious to our glory, I had the satisfaction to reflect, that the men were always obedient, and ready to partake of any danger their officers would share with them.

This, however, was but matter of inference; since I never was attacked, though continually fronted by a strong force, and incommoded by their ordnance, though without being injured by it. After proceeding some hundred paces, I reflected that I had no orders for what I was doing; and that, although I had no right to expect exactness, in a moment of such pressure, it was yet possible my movement might be premature. I knew nothing of what had passed in the centre, or of the enemy being master of the high grounds in my rear about Colonel Morris's house, from whom, no doubt, had proceeded the cannon-balls that whizzed by us; and for which, coming in that direction, I could not account. To be entirely correct in my conduct, I here halted my men, and went myself to a rising ground at some distance, from which I might have a view of the lines where Colonel Cadwalader had been posted. They seemed thoroughly manned; and at the instant, I beckoned to the officers to march back the company, which they immediately put in motion, but looking more attentively, I perceived that the people I saw were British and Hessian troops, that were eagerly pressing forward. Upon this I hastened back to my party, and as there was no time to be lost, being in a situation to be cut to pieces by a corps of cavalry, I ordered them, under the command of my ensign, to make the best of their way and join the body of men, which none doubted being our own, on the heights beyond the inner lines, and that I would follow them as fast as I could, for I was a good deal out of breath with the expedition I had used in going to and returning from the ground, which gave me a view of the outer lines. I accordingly walked on, accompanied by Forrest, who did not choose to leave me alone. Edwards was not with me, having

been promoted to the command of a company, and employed as already mentioned. The body I had pointed to and directed my company to join, under the idea of their being our own men, turned out to be the British, consisting of Colonel Stirling's division of Highlanders, a circumstance that was not at first perceived on account of the distance; nor, owing to the smoke of an irregular fire which they kept up, and the intrenchment in which they were posted covering them to the breast, was it manifest until we got pretty near them. Upon this discovery, we held a moment's consultation, and the result was, that, hemmed in as we were on every side, there was no chance of escaping, and that there was nothing left but to give ourselves up to them. Had we been aware at first of their being the enemy, we might have eluded them by shaping our way along the shore of the Hudson, as my men, soon discovering who they were, had done; but in full confidence that they were our people, I bent my course in the opposite direction to the main body, in the view of meeting Colonel Cadwalader there, and taking his further orders. Thus circumstanced, we clubbed our fusees in token of surrender, and continued to advance towards them. They either did not, or would not, take the signal; and though there were but two of us, from whom they could not possibly expect a design to attack, they did not cease firing at us. I may venture to say, that not less than ten guns were discharged with their muzzles towards us, within the distance of forty or fifty yards; and I might be nearer the truth in saying, that some were let off within twenty. Luckily for us, it was not our riflemen to whom we were targets; and it is astonishing how even these *blunt* shooters could have missed us. But as we were ascend-

ing a considerable hill, they shot over us. I observed they took no aim, and that the moment of presenting and firing was the same. As I had full leisure for reflection, and was perfectly collected, though fearful that their design was to give no quarter, I took off my hat with such a sweep of the arm as could not but be observed, without ceasing, however, to advance. This had the intended effect; A loud voice proceeded from the breastwork, and the firing immediately ceased. An officer of the 42d regiment advanced towards us, and as I was foremost, he civilly accosted me by asking me my rank. Being informed of this, as also of Forrest's, he inquired where the fort lay, and where Colonel Magaw was. I pointed in the direction of the fort, and told him I had not seen Colonel Magaw during the day. Upon this, he put us under the care of a serjeant and a few men, and left us. The serjeant was a decent-looking man, who, in taking us into custody, bestowed upon us, in broad Scotch, the friendly admonition of, *Young men, ye should never fight against your king.* The little hustle produced by our surrender was scarcely over, when a British officer on horseback, apparently of high rank, rode up at full gallop, exclaiming, *What! taking prisoners! Kill them, kill every man of them.* My back was towards him when he spoke; and although by this time there was none of that appearance of ferocity in the guard, which would induce much fear that they would execute his command, I yet thought it well enough to parry it, and turning to him, I took off my hat, saying, *Sir, I put myself under your protection.* No man was ever more effectually rebuked. His manner was instantly softened; He met my salutation with an inclination of his body, and after a civil question or two, as if to make

amends for his sanguinary mandate, he rode off towards the fort, to which he had inquired the way.

Though I had delivered up my arms, I had not adverted to a cartouch-box which I wore about my waist, and which, having once belonged to his Britannic Majesty, presented in front the gilded letters G. R. Exasperated at this trophy on the body of a rebel, one of the soldiers seized the belt with great violence, and in the attempt to unbuckle it, had nearly jerked me off my legs. To appease the offended loyalty of the honest Scot, I submissively took it off and delivered it to him, being conscious that I had no longer any right to it. At this time a Hessian came up. He was not a private, neither did he look like a regular officer; he was some retainer, however, to the German troops; and was as much of a brute as any one I have ever seen in the human form. The wretch came near enough to elbow us; and half unsheathing his sword, with a countenance that bespoke a most vehement desire to use it upon us, he grinned out in broken English, *Eh, you rebel, you dam rebel!* I had by this time entire confidence in our Scotchmen; and therefore regarded the caitiff with the same indifference that I should have viewed a caged wild beast, though with much greater abhorrence.

These transactions, which occupied about ten minutes, passed upon the spot on which we were taken, whence we were marched to an old stable or out-house, where we found about forty or fifty prisoners already collected, principally officers, of whom I only particularly recollect Lieutenant Brodhead of our battalion. We remained on the outside of the building, and, for nearly an hour, sustained a series of most intolerable abuse. This chiefly proceeded from the officers of the light infantry, for the

most part young and insolent puppies, whose worthlessness was apparently their recommendation to a service which placed them in the post of danger, and in the way of becoming food for powder, their most appropriate destination next to that of the gallows. The term rebel, with the epithet *damned* before it, was the mildest we received. We were twenty times told, sometimes with a taunting affectation of concern, that we should, every man of us, be hanged; and were nearly as many times paraded with the most inconceivable insolence, for the purpose of ascertaining whether there were not some deserters among us; and these were always sought for among the officers, as if the lowest fellow in their army was fit for any post in ours. "There's a fellow," an upstart cockney would exclaim, "that I could swear was a deserter."—"What countryman are your, Sir? Did you not belong to such a regiment?"—I was not, indeed, challenged for a deserter; but the indignity of being ordered about by such contemptible whipsters for a moment unmanned me, and I was obliged to apply my handkerchief to my eyes. This was the first time in my life that I had been the victim of brutal, cowardly oppression, and I was unequal to the shock; but my elasticity of mind was soon restored, and I viewed it with the indignant contempt it deserved.

For the greater convenience of guarding us, we were removed from this place to the barn of Colonel Morris's house, already mentioned, which had been the headquarters of our army, as it now was of the royal one. This was the great bank of *deposit* for prisoners taken out of the fort, and already pretty well filled. It was a good new building, and we were ushered into it among the rest, the whole body consisting of from a hundred and

Upon this, there was an immoderate roar of laughter among the officers about the door, who were attending to the process; and I am not sure I did not laugh myself. When it had subsided, one of them, addressing himself to me, observed, with a compliment that had much more of sour than sweet in it, that he was really astonished that I should have taken any thing less than a regiment. To remove as much as possible the sting of this sarcastic thrust at our service, for, I must confess, I was not sufficiently republican to be insensible of its force, I told him, that the person who had produced their merriment belonged to the militia, and that, in his line, as a farmer, he was no doubt honest and respectable.

Although the day was seasonably cool, yet, from the number crowded in the barn, the air within was oppressive and suffocating, which, in addition to the agitations of the day, had produced an excessive thirst; and there was a continual cry for water. I cannot say that this want was unattended to: the soldiers were continually administering to it by bringing water in a bucket. But, though we, who were about the door, did well enough, the supply was very inadequate to such a number of mouths; and many must have suffered much. Our situation brought to my recollection that of Captain Holwell and his party in the Black Hole at Calcutta; and had the weather been equally hot, we should not have been much better off. The fellow who had menaced me with his butt stood with his fusee across the door, and kept us closely immured. I did not choose to ask favours of him; but addressing myself to the officers without the door, who had been put in good humour by their laugh at our poor militia captain, I asked them, if they made no distinction between officers and privates. Most certainly we do, said one of them. I

then observed, that it would be very agreeable to us to be somewhat separated from them now, and to receive a little fresh air. Upon this the sentinels were withdrawn to the distance of about ten or twelve feet from the building; and we were told, that such of us as were officers might walk before the door. This was a great relief to us, as well as to the men in giving them more room.

As I was walking here, a gentleman, who, I was afterwards informed, was Major Maitland, of the 71st, I think, came up and entered into conversation with me. He had one arm in a sling, and it appeared to me he had lost a hand. He regretted the extremes to which matters had been carried, and touched upon our infatuation, as he termed it, in attempting resistance to the power of Britain. He assumed the unqualified justness of her cause, and the consequent unjustness of ours; and, adverting to the day's business, he observed, that I must be aware, that, as we were taken by storm, (speaking of myself and the other prisoners here collected,) our lives were forfeited by the laws of war, and that we might have been put to the sword, without any just impeachment of their humanity; but such, added he, is the clemency of the British nation, that we have not availed ourselves of the right, but shall, on the contrary, treat you with every indulgence. This was delivered in the tone of a lecture which precludes the necessity of a reply. Accordingly, I gave it none; and, as the manner was mild and well intended withal, I received it in good part: as civility was a rarity, the value of this attention was proportionably enhanced and duly appreciated. The major confirmed to me the surrender of the fort, which I had at first doubted, though I can hardly tell why. I certainly never had the expectation that it could have held out long: and I cannot here forbear

remarking, that its incapacity for defence is unequivocally recognised by General Washington in his official letter to Congress. "I sent," says he, "a billet to Colonel Magaw, directing him to hold out, and I would endeavour, in the evening, to bring off the garrison, if the fortress could not be maintained, as I did not expect it could, *the enemy being possessed of the adjacent ground.*" Now, had the attempt been to defend the fort alone, instead of its environs, which had constituted the post of the main army, this effect of the enemy's possessing the adjacent ground would at once have taken place, and the fort have been untenable. The fort then was not calculated upon as the point to be defended; but it was the position in the open field. Hence, we were improperly termed a garrison; and two thousand men, of which half were militia, were pitted against the whole of the British army. For seven thousand troops were actually employed in the attack, and the rest ready to support them. It was certainly enough then, that we fought them, and withstood their efforts until noon. Because posts had been evacuated; because Long Island, New York, Kingsbridge, and White Plains, had successively been found untenable by the concentrated force of the continent, this handful was to apologize to the country for the supposed disgrace of our arms, and the defective constitution of our military system. As "the troops were in high spirits, and would make a good defence,"* why e'en let these southern men, say Generals Putnam and Greene, take

* See General Washington's letter, above alluded to, which shows that the defence, or evacuation of the post, rested on the discretion of General Greene.

the glory of it to themselves: Whatever be their fate, they will kill a good number of the enemy; and desperate expedients are adapted to the declining state of our cause. These, it is true, were dashing counsels: Nevertheless, to those acquainted with the unfriendly, repulsive temper which prevailed between the southern and eastern troops, and the selfish, clannish spirit, testified on all occasions by the latter, * there would be nothing very revolting in the imputation of such motives; in which, also, the historian in the Annual Register might find a clue to the solution of the enigma, why an operation on so large a scale should have been committed to but a colonel. It was, at any rate, a current opinion among us who were taken, that we had been sacrificed to selfish feeling; nor, upon a cool consideration of all the circumstances, after a lapse of four-and-thirty years, can I see full cause to renounce that opinion. I do not believe, at least, that if we had been New England men, we should have been left there. If Greene really knew no better at this era, he was deeply instructed by his error; since, whatever were the characters of his subsequent generalship, it never disclosed symptoms of rash audacity.

But I must not forget I am a captive. Among the events of the afternoon was the meeting with a Captain Wilson, of the light infantry, who called to inquire whether there were any gentlemen among us from Philadelphia. Upon telling him that I was, he asked me if I knew Mr Philip Wilson, a merchant of that city.

* One instance of it was a partial exchange of prisoners, continually carried on in favour of the eastern officers, to the cruel discouragement of the southern.

I told him I had a slight acquaintance with him, as also with his brother Edward. "They are both," says he, "brothers of mine, and though I detest their principles," he was obliged, perhaps, to go further on this point than a refined politeness might warrant, on account of his brother officers and soldiers standing by, "I shall be happy to render you every service in my power." He then minuted my name and rank on his tablets as he did Tudor's, for the same reason of knowing his brothers; and told us he would do himself the pleasure of calling upon us in New York. He informed us, also, that he had seen Major West, Captain Lenox, I think, and some others of our friends at the fort, who had been inquiring for us. During the remainder of the day, if I except a sight of General Howe, who was pointed out to me at a little distance, and the burning of a pretty large brick house hard by, which happened, as the soldiers told us, through the carelessness of some grenadiers in cooking beef-steaks, nothing occurred of any consequence: But, in the evening, a most advantageous change took place, and, from the custody of a low ruffian, we were transferred to that of a gentleman.

This was Lieutenant Becket, to the best of my recollection of the 27th or 37th regiment. Upon taking the guard in the evening, he expressed concern about our lodging, and proposed to us to accompany him into the barn-loft to see whether that would do. He was also attended by some of his brother officers. We ascended by a very good step ladder, and found a spacious room, well roofed and floored, and clear of lumber. This, gentlemen, I think, may do, said he; I dare say, you have sometimes lodged in a worse place. That we had, we told him, and that this was as comfortable as we could desire.

I will send you, if I can, said he, at going away, a bottle of wine; but, at any rate, a bottle of spirits, and as to the latter, he was as good as his word; a soldier, in about a quarter of an hour, brought it to us, and this was our substitute for supper as well as dinner. In the morning, a little after sunrise, a soldier brought me Mr. Becket's compliments, with a request that I would come down and breakfast with him, bringing two of my friends with me, as he had not the means of entertaining more. I thankfully accepted his invitation, and took with me Forrest and Tudor. He was seated on a bench before the door, with a good fire before him, and the soldiers of the guard in a semicircle about him. Besides the bench, we were accommodated with a chair or two, and he gave us a dish of very good coffee, with plenty of excellent toast, which was the only morsel we had eaten for the last twenty-four hours; more fortunate in this than our fellow-sufferers, who got nothing until the next morning, when the first provisions were drawn. The soldiers were chatting and cracking their jokes on each other while we breakfasted; and I was surprised at the easy familiarity which seemed to prevail between them and their officer. But it appeared to be perfectly understood betwen them, that their coteries, though so near each other as that every word from either might be heard by both, were yet entirely distinct, and that each had an exclusive right to its own conversation; still they did not interrupt ours, being silent when we talked. The fact was, that Mr Becket was the darling of his soldiers; and one of them told us, that we should find few men like him. I had here an opportunity to observe the striking difference between their appointments and ours. While our poor

fellows were some of them already ragged, and even the best of them clad in flimsy thread-bare clothes, with worse stockings and shoes, these were tight and comfortable in body and limbs; and every soldier was accommodated with a woollen night-cap, which most of them had yet on. A sad contrast for the contemplation of the American soldier! Wisdom is no less attributable to nations than to individuals; and the British army, if I may so express myself, is a sensible establishment, in which every possible regard is had to both comfort and safety. Though, in extremities, it may be the business of the soldier to die, it is not forgotten that he is to live if he can, consistent with his duty; and to this consideration, it appears to me, much attention was paid by General Howe in his operations against our post. He could not have had a doubt that his attack would be successful, yet this was not enough: it must be conducted with an eye to the saving of men, and the purchasing it as cheap as possible. Had he immediately advanced against our lines on the south, the loss of the British troops would, in all probability, have been heavy; whereas, in making his principal effort by Harlem river under cover of his batteries, it was comparatively small; and when he had gained the high grounds in this quarter, he was at once master of the field.

It has been said, that we could not have chosen a better adversary than General Howe; and it is not improbable that one more enterprising and less methodical might have pushed us harder. Yet, though he was indolent, often treated us with unnecessary respect; and, in a too great security of his prey, might have meant to play us as an angler plays a fish upon his hook, I am still inclined to think, that, when he acted, he fought his

army to advantage; that his dispositions were good, and planned with much discretion. General Burgoyne bears testimony to the faultless propriety of his disposition at Bunker's Hill; and General Lee says, that, "in the capacity of an executive soldier, he was all fire and activity, brave and cool as Julius Cæsar." In the affair of Fort Washington he must have had a perfect knowledge of the ground we occupied. This he might have acquired from hundreds in New York; but he might have been more thoroughly informed of every thing desirable to be known from one Dement, an officer of Magaw's battalion, who was intelligent in points of duty, and deserted to the enemy about a week before the assault. This man was probably an emissary from them; he was a European, I recollect, and not originally an officer of the corps; his name, at least, is not among those appointed by the committee of safety.

Our situation under Mr Becket was as agreeable as it could be made. The term rebel was entirely banished from our hearing. When speaking of the belligerents, it was your people and our people, and the manners of all about him took the tone he gave. His acquaintance, too, seemed of an order wholly different from the rake-hells we had seen yesterday; nor do I recollect a single instance of incivility to any one of us, while under his care. But notwithstanding this, my heart was ill at ease. It was the prey of chagrin, and a most afflicting uncertainty. I was deeply mortified at the idea that we were disgraced in the eyes of our countrymen, with whom the belief was current, that Fort Washington was impregnable; and the events of the action had been, moreover, peculiarly unpropitious to the fame of the continental battalions from Pennsylvania. All the glory

that was going had, in my idea of what had passed, been engrossed by the regiment of Rawlins, which had been actively engaged, killed a number of the enemy, and lost many themselves; and although it seldom, if ever happens, that there is close fighting in every part of a field, yet it is this alone which obtains *eclat*, or that, in the view of the world, escapes contempt. As to the merit of preserving a good countenance, being firm in a post, and only relinquishing it when no longer tenable, or expedient to be retained, it can only be appreciated by persons of military experience: It is at best but of a negative kind, and has nothing in it of brilliancy.* How many did they kill? How many did they lose? are the questions which produce the data on which martial fame is calculated; and these were much against us. The number of British killed, by General Howe's account, was not large; and the whole loss is fixed by Mr Stedman at eight hundred, by much the greater part of which was sustained by the Hessians, who attacked Rawlins, in a post extremely difficult of access naturally, and rendered still more so by works and abbatis. In the two battalions of Cadwalader and Magaw, there were but two or three officers wounded, and one killed, or rather reputed killed, as I have recently understood that he survived his wounds, though very grievous, and was some years after living at Germantown. This was Captain Miller, who, as already mentioned, was going to

* I was not aware at this time, that detachments from our regiments had maintained a contest which entitled them to the praise of the enemy; for, by the concurrent testimony of General Howe, and the historian Mr Stedman, the ground on which they fought was obstinately defended: And I have still so much of the *esprit du corps* and pride of a soldier about me, as to be gratified by the circumstance.

shoot a sentinel on Montezore's Island. Among the wounded was Captain Lenox, very slightly, and Ensign M'Intyre badly. As to myself, I was conscious I had done my duty, but this must remain unknown; and I was unable to put aside the reflection, that we were both sacrificed and disgraced; captive to an enemy whose system it was to treat us with contempt; to stigmatize us as rebels, and load us with opprobrium; and that all this was, probably, but a prelude to the impending ruin and subjugation of my country. In addition to these dismaying considerations, I thought my brother killed. I had intelligence from the fort that he was not there; neither had any one seen him after he had left the intrenchments; though it was suggested, that a boat-load of the garrison that had been hard pressed had got over to Fort Lee, and that he might have been in it. There was also room to hope, that, if not among these, (admitting the circumstance of the boat's having gone over to be true,) he might be at the village of Haerlem; in which, it was said, there was a small collection of prisoners. Being impatient to satisfy myself, and know the worst, I applied to Mr Becket for permission, if not improper, to go to Haerlem; and, if not successful there, to traverse the field of action. He granted my request without hesitation; but observed, it was proper I should have a soldier with me to protect me, and account for my being at large; and, had he not been too polite, he might have added, to guard me, which, it would have been a neglect of duty in him not to have attended to. I went to Haerlem, but received no satisfaction. There were, indeed, some prisoners there, in the custody of the German troops; but they had neither seen my brother, nor heard any thing of him. I then returned, and took my

course, with my attendant, along the banks of Haerlem river, where the action had been warm. Within a few hundred yards of the barn in which we were quartered, I met with the bodies of three or four soldiers of our battalion, who had fallen by musket-balls; but obtained nothing in regard to the object of my pursuit. Weary of the melancholy errand, and reflecting that the day would be insufficient to complete the search, I gave it up, with a determination to look as much as possible on the favourable side of things, and wait in patience for the event. Some time after, Mr Becket, who took a friendly interest in the cause of my distress, applied to a gentleman on horseback, who had superintended the interment of the dead, to know whether he had met with the body of an officer in the uniform I wore, as I was anxious for the fate of a brother, who was missing. With much delicacy, addressing himself to me, he replied,—"No, Sir, we buried no one with linen fine enough to have been your brother." This information, though not conclusive, was encouraging; and the liberality of our present treatment, added to the fineness of the morning, though pretty sharp, gave a fillip to my spirits, and a more pleasing turn to my thoughts. The sun looked vastly brighter to my eyes than it had done an hour before; and I began to flatter myself that matters might not be so bad as, in a desponding moment, I had supposed; that, ere long, we should be exchanged, and have an opportunity of retrieving the disgrace of our recent discomfiture. In this frame of mind, conversation took a more cheerful course, and I satisfied some of Mr Becket's inquiries respecting our affairs. He was particularly inquisitive as to the character of General Washington; of whom, from misrepresentations, no

doubt, propagated for political purposes, he had received some very erroneous impressions. Appearing to think favourably of him as a soldier, and as to the exterior qualifications of a gentleman, he had yet understood that he was a man of desperate fortune, who, having wasted his own property, had also dissipated that of his wife, by play, and had now no resource but in war and confusion. I assured him that nothing could be farther from the truth than this idea; and left him, I believe, convinced of his error. Though he spoke with much moderation of the contest, the merits of which were but glanced at, he seemed to entertain no doubts of the justice of the side on which his profession had placed him, as well as of our inability to withstand the power of the mother country. He was forcibly struck with the ill condition of our troops, the badness of their arms, and insufficiency, in every respect, of our appointments; and observed, that a gentleman of our army required more than an ordinary degree of fortitude to take the field under such disadvantages.

The distinguished liberality of Mr Becket's deportment requires of me something more than a mere passing remembrance. If my memory does not much deceive me, he told us he was an Irishman, and a married man. His figure was pleasing, rather manly than elegant; tall, and, though not corpulent, indicative of a temperament inclining to fulness. His face was fine, and beamed with candour and benevolence. He might have passed for a man of twenty-eight or thirty, though he could not well have been less than thirty-five, having served, as he informed us, in the war of *fifty-six*, probably in the latter part of it, and it lasted until sixty-three. He mentioned this circumstance in adverting to the

cannonade of the preceding day, which he said had far exceeded in heaviness any he had ever heard in Germany, or in his life. He had been long in service, and appeared to be generally known and respected in the army; being, indeed, eminently calculated to be beloved and admired; and, so far as I could judge of him, from the acquaintance of a day, he possessed the qualities, which, with equal power, would have made him a Titus, and have given him a legitimate claim to the designation of *deliciæ humani generis*. The command of the guard, in his mode of exercising the function, resembled a trust committed to him for our benefit; and his conduct bespoke the guardian rather than the gaoler.

About noon, a young officer, smartly dressed and well mounted, rode up with his horse in a foam, and pulling out his watch, observed, that he had scarcely been an hour in coming from New York. He was a genuine, smooth-faced, fresh-coloured Englishman, and from the elegance of his horse, and self-importance of his manner, I supposed him to be a person of family and consideration. "Becket," said he, looking round him, "this is a damn'd strong piece of ground—ten thousand of our men would defend it against the world."—"I don't know that," returned Becket; "the ground, to be sure, is strong in some parts, but you go too far: I would not undertake its defence against the world, I assure you." The conversation then passed to other topics, and the cavalier, after a few minutes, rode off to exhibit himself elsewhere. Several other incidents, equally unimportant, occurred in the course of the day; but one, that, from the substantial good which attended it at the time, I cannot omit: And this was, that from the table of General Jones, the officer of the day, with whom Mr

Becket dined, there came to me, about two o'clock, a plate or small dish of victuals amply supplied. The contents consisted of two or three slices of corned beef, with cabbage, the leg and wing of a turkey, with bread, &c. in proportion. In the language of Lord Kaimes, "could peace afford a sweeter scene," than was exhibited in the conduct of this kind, generous, noble-hearted gentleman! To be admired, it only needs to be faithfully depicted, and this is all my feeble pencil aims at. It consisted of a series of attentions, as delicate as they were friendly, of which the following is an additional instance. In the evening we were drawn up for the purpose of being marched a part of the way towards New York. Being formed in the usual manner, in two ranks, with the officers on the right, in order to be foremost when faced for the march, our commander took his station in front, and gaily flourishing a switch which he held in his hand, with a kind of apologetic smile for the liberty he was taking with us, "Come, gentlemen," said he, "we are all soldiers," (combining us with his own men, enclosing us in two lines; and who, at the same time, received the word of command,) *To the right face*; then giving the word *March*, he good humouredly walked along with us, without losing sight, however, of the decorum which actual duty required. When we had proceeded about half a mile, we were halted, for the purpose, as I afterwards found, of relieving the guard. As we stood here, an officer, wrapped up in a camblet cloak, young, and of a very pleasing address, who had been talking with Becket, came up to me, observing, that the evening was very cool, and asked, if such weather was usual with us at this season of the year. I told him it was not unusual in the latter part of No-

vember. After an observation or two on this topic, he expressed his hope that I had been well treated. As well as possible, I replied, by some, and as ill by others. "I am extremely sorry for it," said he, "but there are rascals in all services." Soon after Mr Becket informed us that he was about to leave us, telling me that he would make it a point to obtain information respecting my brother, and that he would not fail to acquaint me with the result in New York; then bringing up Captain Manuel, the person who was to succeed him, he introduced me to him, with a particular recommendation of me to his care, and wished us a good evening.

Under the command of Captain Manuel we continued our march until within six or seven miles of New York. We were here quartered very comfortably for the night, in the back part of a vacant house, of which Mr Manuel took to himself the front. Although he had not the amenity and ease of manners so eminently possessed by his predecessor, he far outwent him in ceremonious civility; and, in one or two interviews I had with him, he almost overwhelmed me with bows. It would be unjust, however, not to say, that his usage of us was unexceptionable, though we were not much favoured with his company. Here, for the first time, we drew provisions for the almost famished prisoners, in which number, the reader knows, I have no right to include myself, and one or two of my friends; and it was politely referred to me, as the eldest officer in the company, to put my name to the provision return, made out also by ourselves. In the morning early the rest of the prisoners from the fort and Haerlem village had come on; and, being all assembled, we took up the line of march preparatory to our untriumphal entry into the city of New York. From the circumstance

of our being most advanced, we had the honour of forming the van of the procession, strung out to a great length, between a line of British infantry on either side. Captain Manuel, from an effect of the arrangements, had now ceased to accompany us; instead of whom, we, in front, were escorted by a Captain Warren, a young Irishman, of the Inniskillen regiment. He was not uncourteous or disobliging; and was extremely prompt in attending to the want of drink, which sometimes occurred upon the road, on these occasions offering the contents of his canteen to mix with the water that was brought us. But he was somewhat too lavish of the term *rebel*, extremely offensive to my ear, I must confess, however appropriate it might be. In the English language it is too much interwoven with the idea of state criminality, to be other than highly opprobrious. It might be doubted, nevertheless, whether, in the mouth of Captain Warren, it had its full malignity; and whether its adoption was not less owing to a design to stigmatize, than to the insufficiency of his vocabulary. He was fond of chatting, and, I might add, of boasting of the prowess of the British troops, whom he took occasion to compare with ours. I told him that I had often seen them before, and admitted that they were well dressed and well armed, to which circumstances might perhaps be owing their apparent advantage over ours. He took what I said in good part; and what is a proof that he ought to be excepted from the real scoundrels in the British service is, that, some time afterwards, meeting him in the street at New York, he stopped me, and behaved with an entirely correct civility.

On the road, as we approached the city, we were beset by a parcel of soldiers' trulls and others, who came out to meet us. It was obvious, that, in the calculation of

this assemblage of female loyalty, the war was at an end; and that the whole of the rebel army, Washington and all, were safe in durance. Which is Washington? Which is Washington? proceeded from half a dozen mouths at once; and the guard was obliged to exert itself to keep them off. Some of them assailed us with vollies of Billingsgate; and Colonel Maxwell, who rode along side of us, and whom I immediately recognised for a Captain Maxwell who had once lodged at my mother's, had enough to do to silence one of them, calling out repeatedly, "Away with that woman! Take her away! Knock her down, the bitch! Knock her down!"

Previously to entering the city, we were drawn up, for about an hour, on the high ground near the East river. Here, the officers being separated from the men, we were conducted into a church, where, if I mistake not, we signed a parole. While in this building, which, with the addition of those spectators who pressed in along with us, was pretty much crowded, a portly, well-looking, middle-aged, non-commissioned officer of the 42d regiment, approached me, observing, in a low voice, that he was sure he had seen me before: Was not my name ——? I answered in the affirmative. I thought so, said he, I have often seen you at your mother's in Philadelphia; and though you were then but a boy, I clearly retrace your features. As you are probably in want of money, may I beg of you to accept of this? slipping into my hand a dollar. I objected to taking it, as I might never have an opportunity of repaying him. No matter if you have not, said he; it is but a trifle, but such as it is, you cannot oblige me more than by accepting it. I accordingly put it in my pocket, the confusion and bustle of the scene preventing my taking measures for ascertaining

the means of seeing him again; and, having never afterwards met with him, I am still indebted to this amount, together with the gratitude that is inseparable from it, to this worthy, generous man, whose memory, it seems, was better than that of Colonel Stirling, Captain Grant, and many others, who had better means of recollection than this serjeant. They did not see me, it is true; and, if they had, they were doubtless too much in the Bute system of politics, to have any charity for our rebellion, or one engaged in it. But Mr Stirling, when a captain, I always thought a haughty, self-important man, too intent on things above him to cast a glance at those beneath; and, whether correct or not in this opinion, having, in truth, no right to expect any thing from him or his clan, I was not disappointed; nor should I have thought of taking notice of them, had not the disloyal officiousness of their serjeant somehow prompted my pencil to give them a nook in the back-ground.

I ought before to have mentioned a visit from a Mr Johnson of Georgia, who had been my fellow pupil at Pike's fencing-school. Whether it was on the day, or the day after we were taken, I do not remember, but Johnson, whose politics I had not before known, was, I found, a staunch government man, and invested with a commission in the royal army. He appeared not displeased at seeing me well, but was at no pains to conceal his exultation at our misfortune, and the prospect he thence derived of our being speedily subdued. Thus called upon, I bragged a little in my turn, though with a heart much less assured than his.

Our men were confined in churches and sugar-houses, and quarters were assigned for us who were officers in the upper part of the town, in what was called *The Holy*

Ground. But besides that it was not *tout-à-fuite honnête*, or entirely correct, to become a charge to his Britannic Majesty, after having presumed to resist his royal authority, I was somewhat apprehensive that his fare might not be the most sumptuous; and, therefore, though but with the single dollar in my pocket, which I owed to the bounty of the benevolent Highlander, I yet ventured to take boarding at four dollars per week. I knew that I had an excellent banker in Philadelphia, and that, if specie was to be procured, my good mother would take care to get it, and send it to me. The person with whom I boarded was a Mrs Carroll, who, under the protection of General Robertson, commandant of the town, was hardy enough to entertain rebels. She passed for the particular favourite of this gentleman; and was sufficiently young and buxom to give probability to the imputation. She played her cards with much address, and bent her politics, if she had any, to her interest. She was, no doubt, Tory or Whig, as best suited the company she happened to be in; and, of course, with us was always the latter—shaping, accordingly, her news and her anecdotes, of which she picked up abundance when she went abroad, and detailed to us on the opening of the budget on her return. With due allowance for her influences and motives, we were flattered, and sometimes instructed by her communications. What led me to these quarters was the circumstance of some of the Pennsylvania officers taken on Long Island being already in them, viz. Colonels Atlee and Miles; Major Burd, Captain Herbet, &c. There was also there a Mr Coursey, or De Courcey, of Smallwood's regiment; and they now, besides myself, received the addition of Colonel Magaw, Major West, Captains Lenox and Ed-

weeks, and Dr M'Henry, who afterwards became a member of General Washington's family, and secretary of war. Colonel Cadwalader (through the interest of General Prescott, who, when a prisoner with us, had been liberally treated by Dr Cadwalader, the father of the colonel) was immediately released, and went home on parole.

From the number of her boarders, Mrs Carroll might be supposed to have a very large house, but this was not the fact. It was but an humble tenement in Queen's Street, of two stories, with two or three chambers: but adjoining it was a building, which, having been abandoned, we, at her instance, under the auspices of General Robertson, took possession of, and furnished with our own mattresses and blankets. Nothing was scarcer in New York this winter than fuel; but, clubbing our weekly allowance of coal, we were enabled to supply for our hostess the parlour and kitchen fire.

The next object of our cares was our baggage at Fort Washington. The security of that belonging to those taken in the fort was stipulated for on its surrender; and although I could not claim the benefit of the capitulation, I did not doubt that mine, as a part of the mass, would fare as well as the rest. It chiefly consisted of a mattress and a trunk, in which was a bundle of letters, the fruits of an interesting correspondence, which had never been intermitted, from the time of my leaving Philadelphia, to that of my captivity; and which I valued far beyond all my other possessions. They were now more precious than ever; since all letters, to or from us, being subjected to inspection, the intercourse must cease; and the reperusal of these must console me for the privation of recent communications. My anxiety,

however, was soon removed, by the safe arrival by water, two or three days after our reaching New York, of my trunk and mattress. I lost, indeed, a fowling-piece, small sword, and some other articles; but these were of little consequence; and I thought myself supremely fortunate in losing no more. The advantage of a change of clothes being by this time very desirable, I gladly availed myself of the contents of my trunk, which, besides linen, stockings, &c. afforded me a better suit of regimentals, and a newer hat than those I had on. As I saw no reason why I should not wear them, I put them on for the purpose of taking a walk through the city. My fellow lodgers, who had been taken on Long Island, being older and more prudent than myself, evinced some surprise at my temerity. To them I appeared much better dressed than *rebel beseemed;* and they predicted the probability of insult and abuse, should I exhibit myself in a trim so remote from the garb of humility; for as to themselves, they had, with the exception of Colonel Atlee, and one or two more, exchanged their martial habiliments for plain clothes; and even in these they rarely went out. Without regarding their suggestions, however, I sallied forth alone, and walked past the coffeehouse, down to the battery. Finding the gateway open, I entered it, and, after traversing it to its extremity, I strolled back again: almost every sentinel, to my great surprise, I must confess, handling his arms to me as I passed. Leaving the battery, I took a turn into another part of the town, and after a considerable round, regained my lodgings, without having met with the smallest molestation. But I afterwards learned from Mr Theophilact Bache, (of whom I shall have occasion to speak in the sequel,) that he well recollected

once seeing me pass the coffeehouse, probably at this very time; and that he and some other gentlemen had been obliged to exert themselves to prevent some blackguards insulting me. This conduct of mine would seem to indicate an arrogance, or an apathy, that I can aver was not in my character. It was not a want of feeling, but an excess of it, which prompted me to the proceeding. Revolting against the design to treat us as state criminals, and to overwhelm us with the odium attached to that condition; smarting, too, from the personal insults I had received, and in a state of cruel suspense respecting my brother, the prevailing colour of which was, that he had been killed, my mind was slightly tinctured with that sombre enthusiasm, which exults in the opportunity of setting persecution at defiance; and which, in its excess, can subdue the strongest instincts of nature, as was evinced in the ferocious heroism of Charlotte Corday.

CHAPTER IX.

Pardon offered to the Americans and return to their Allegiance—Letter of General Washington—Sufferings of Prisoners—General Lee taken—British Provost Marshal—Character of Colonel Allen—A partial Exchange of Prisoners—American Officers removed to Long Island.

One of the first measures of the Howes, in consequence of their late successes, was to issue a proclamation, tendering pardon to such as should renounce the cause of rebellion. I only recollect its general tenor, and that the proffered grace might have been spared. Not more than one or two, and, indeed, not one to my certain knowledge, embraced the invitation, although warmly recommended to us by Mr Commissary Loring. This was, no doubt, a matter both of surprise and mortification; and one which, in no degree, tended to mitigate the contemptuous rigour of our treatment.

Mr Becket, it may be recollected, had promised to call upon me. He kept his word, and sought me at our allotted quarters on the Holy Ground. Not finding me there, or meeting with any one who could tell him where I lodged, he left a message for me, importing that, after the most diligent inquiry, he had not been able to learn any thing respecting my brother. Some time after, meeting in the street a serjeant who had belonged to his guard, I inquired for him, and was informed, that, very shortly after I had seen him, he had embarked for Rhode Island.

Among the rare exceptions to the haughty demeanour of our lordly masters might be mentioned the occasional civility of Major Skene, who seemed, for himself, to have adopted the conciliatory mode of conduct, and sometimes called to see us. Besides a slight acquaintance he had made with Colonels Atlee and Miles, he had, while in durance among us, contracted a sort of general acquaintance with the *rebel character* of America; and he appeared not to think very ill of it, notwithstanding its collision with the high pretensions of British supremacy, of which he was an unqualified votary. He was a portly man, about forty or forty-five, apparently frank and good-humoured; and so far was he from resenting the usage he had received from us, that he acknowledged he had been treated full as well as he had a right to expect, since he had made it a point to be as troublesome and vexatious as possible.

Between two and three weeks had elapsed, when I received a letter from my mother. It was brought by a Captain Hesketh, of the British army, who had been a prisoner with us. It acquainted me he had money for me: but a piece of intelligence, of still greater consequence, was, that my brother was safe and at home. A boat had got over the Hudson, as I had heard, and to avoid falling into the hands of the enemy, by whom he had been closely pressed, he had put himself on board. Nothing now was wanting to make me as happy as my situation would admit. I waited upon Captain Hesketh, found him at home, and was very politely treated both by him and his lady, to whose notice I had been particularly recommended by Miss Amiel, of Philadelphia, a mutual acquaintance. Among other things, Mrs Hesketh, who was the most communicative, informed me,

that they had met General Washington on their road at the head of his army, which must, indeed, have been a small one; though this unwelcome truth being spared, I had not the courage to elicit it by any questions. And this account agrees with a letter of the General to the board of war, dated Brunswick, the 30th of November, wherein he speaks of having met with Captain Hesketh and his family. Of the same date, from the same person, and in his own hand, I shall now present the reader with a letter, which, considering the pressing situation of affairs, displays a mind at once superior to adversity, and alive to the impressions of humanity, and the feelings of private distress. It appears to be in answer to a letter from my mother, on hearing of my captivity:—

"*Brunswick, 30th November* 1776.

"MADAM,—Your letter to your son (enclosed to me) went in the day after it came to my hands, by a flag which happened to be going to New York.

"I am very sorry for the misfortune of your son's captivity, but these are accidents which must be experienced and felt in war. Colonel Cadwalader, who has been suffered to return to Philadelphia, would be able to inform you of your son's health. Any hard money which you may be able to forward to me, or Mr Tilghman, (who is of my family,) shall be contrived to him by some means or other.

"I am, Madam,

"Your very humble servant,

"GO: WASHINGTON."

This letter is given *verbatim* as it is written, without

presuming to supply what may be supposed an omission in the last line. The words *to be sent*, after the word *contrived*, appear to be wanting. Whether they were left out through inadvertence, or in compliance with an American mode of speaking, taken notice of by Dr Witherspoon, in an essay, under the signature of A Druid, I shall not undertake to decide. I can only say, that if it is an Americanism, I never heard it before, and that it is not common in Pennsylvania. It is, however, perfectly intelligible, and analogous to other contractions in the language of business.

The letter spoken of by the General, as having been enclosed to him, and sent in by a flag, I did not receive until some time after that by Captain Hesketh. It had, probably, wandered out of its road into the hands of a British officer, of the same Christian and surname, as well as rank, as this gentleman told a lady of my acquaintance in Philadelphia, when General Howe afterwards got possession of it, that he had been fortunate enough to find a mother in this country, from whom he had received some very affectionate letters.

It was about this time that I received a billet from Captain Wilson, already mentioned. It was equally addressed to Major West, Captain Tudor, and myself; and stated, that a tour of duty into Jersey had been the cause of his not attending to us before; and after apologizing for not waiting on us, for some cause or other, it requested our company to dine with him on the day but one after its date, in which case, he would send his servant to show us the way to his quarters. We understood, from his note, that he was fearful of paying his respects, personally, in the usual manner. It was, obviously, the system of the British army to treat us as per-

sons, with whom to maintain an intercourse would, on their part, be both criminal and degrading; and Wilson, from whatever cause, appeared more than ordinarily solicitous to avoid any ground for suspicion of too much attention to us. West was indisposed, but Tudor and myself, for the sake of a little variety, waving etiquette, agreed to dine with him; and, when the day came, were conducted to his house, or rather to his chamber, by a soldier. The dinner party was small, consisting, besides ourselves, only of our entertainer and a lieutenant, whose name I have forgotten. He was a tall and stout young Irishman, who, by way of high recommendation, Wilson took an opportunity to inform me, was very brave; and had killed, with his own hand, a captain of ours at White Plains. This I was, no doubt, to take as a compliment to myself, being as much as to say, I consider you as a brave man too, Sir, by supposing you capable of appreciating the quality in another, though even at the expence of your own side. This young Ajax, however, was modest and unassuming; and both he and the captain acted in exact conformity to that creed of a professional soldier, which, according to Lucan, is as old as the civil war of the first triumvirate, and contained in the declaration of Pompey's Generals, Afranius and Petreius, to Cæsar, that

> War, with its own occasions, came unsought,
> And found them on the side for which they fought.

The bottle was briskly circulated, and, in the course of the afternoon, there were several droppers in; among others a curious little creature, who bore the commission of either a captain or a lieutenant. He had the appear-

ance of a youth not exceeding twenty, and was one of the smallest and lightest men I ever beheld; a genuine *Master Slender*, that might have been "made out of a cheese-paring after supper." If he weighed an hundred, it was much. From the conversation, in which he took his full proportion, it appeared that he had either a wife or a mistress; for he complained that his lady, whom he called Betsey or Kitty, had grown vastly too fond of the pleasures of the town, and, by inference, somewhat too indifferent to himself. The circumstance, however, did not seem likely to break his heart; and the less so from not being thought necessary to be locked up in that repository. He evinced, in another instance, not necessary to detail, that he was an utter stranger to the nicer feelings; and from such a graceless compend of premature debauchery being treated with some attention, I was induced to consider him as the degenerate offspring of some great sire. Another person, who joined us in the evening, appeared to belong to the navy. He was probably a surgeon, captain of a transport, or something in that way, as, though he wore a cockade, he had no uniform. He was called upon for his toast. What have you been drinking? said he. Peace, reconciliation, and so forth, replied Wilson. But the fellow, either stupid or perversely malignant, gave, Confusion to the rebels. This produced at least confusion in the company, which was extremely disconcerted and hurt, our host in particular. Perceiving this, I determined to give the circumstance the go-by with the best possible grace; and, therefore, with a silent contempt for the toast, I drank to Captain Wilson. He returned the compliment, and the other gentlemen bowing round the table without repeating

the sentiment, it was only swallowed by the giver, who not long after took his leave. The general hilarity was soon restored in the true national style, which, without the "feast of reason," has certainly much of the "flow of soul;" and whatever a rigid policy might dictate elsewhere, it was wholly laid aside at this table. Tory or Whig, loyal or disloyal, was out of the question; and about eight or nine o'clock Captain Wilson, putting us under the care of a soldier with a lantern in his hand, permitted us to depart, with full as much wine on board as in conscience was due to our slight acquaintance with his brothers in Philadelphia; and thus, by a single act of Irish hospitality, he cancelled the obligation he had voluntarily imposed upon himself, of rendering us every service in his power. Something, however, was due to this gentleman for a treatment of us altogether liberal and obliging.

But while, from the advantage of bearing commissions, we had the benefit of free air and the use of our limbs, our poor devoted soldiers were enclosed within walls, scantily supplied with provisions of bad quality, wretchedly clothed, and destitute of sufficient fuel, if, indeed, they had any. Disease was the inevitable consequence of such a situation; and their prisons, of course, soon became hospitals. A fatal malady was generated; and the mortality, to every heart not steeled by the spirit of party, was truly deplorable. I once, and once only, ventured to penetrate into these abodes of human misery and despair. But to what purpose repeat my visit, when I had neither relief to administer nor comfort to bestow! What could I say to the unhappy victims who appealed to me for assistance, or sought my advice as to the alternative of death or apostacy? For,

until rendered worthless and unfit for military duty by disease, they might enlist, and thus rescue themselves from the sufferings that awaited them. I endeavoured to encourage them with the hope of an exchange, but humanity forbade my counselling them to rush on sure destruction: I rather chose to turn my eye from a scene I could not meliorate; to put from me a calamity which mocked my power of alleviation.

Our own condition, too, though a paradise to theirs, was becoming hopeless. To say nothing of the danger of legal punishment, it indicated a captivity without end, or at least commensurate with the war. To other existing obstacles a new one was added by the capture of General Lee, considered by General Howe as a deserter from the British army, and therefore not entitled to exchange. Meanwhile the sternness of power was displayed with unabating rigour and systematic perseverance. In this scene of military despotism I sometimes indulged my melancholy in an evening walk, when, imagination taking its flight to the shores of the Delaware, insensibly led my steps to the western part of the city. Having been the theatre of the late fire, it was marked by devastation; and as nothing is more congenial to the soul in gloom than to wander among ruins,

> What time the moon, in solemn splendour pours
> Long threads of silver through the gaping towers,

it was the time I chose to take my solitary ramble through the deserted and dilapidated edifices of Broadway. Here, amid the irregularly indented battlements which frowned in desolation, I meditated on the horrors of this guilty city, where "poor misfortune felt the lash of vice," and thousands of my unhappy countrymen

were perishing under the hand of proud unfeeling authority: not poniarded, it is true, before the faces of their oppressors, nor murdered by the impious mockery of judicial investigation, but remorselessly consigned to slow consuming tortures, equally fatal and potent to destruction. In this, I admit, I speak the language of indignant feeling; but unless the suffering of the American prisoners was the effect of dire necessity, the British nation should be less clamorous about the massacre of Jaffa, since the quality of her humanity, when compared with that of France, would be precisely that of Nero when contrasted with Domitian's; and, hence, the whitest, it must be granted, by a very few gradations. The former, as we are told by Tacitus, had the grace to avert his eyes from the enormities he ordained; while those of the latter feasted on human agony, and noted down the sighs of those who dared to sympathize with the victims. *Nero tamen subtraxit oculos; jussitque scelera, non spectavit: præcipua sub Domitiano miseriarum pars erat, videre et aspici; cum suspiria nostra subscriberentur.*

It is no grateful office to apologize for obduracy; nor is it for the sufferers to seek excuses for the conduct of their oppressors. Justice, nevertheless, demands, that due consideration should be had for the situation of the invading army; the scantiness of its limits; its ability to guard its prisoners, and means of subsisting them; nor would the bandaged deity, on a scrutiny, I fear, entirely hold guiltless the assertors of liberty and declared protectors of the rights of man. By her own pitiable policy, the balance in an exchange of prisoners was miserably against Congress; and her annual enlistments opposed a formidable bar to the most sacred duties, both of honour and humanity. But the heroic epoch of seventy-six had

its full leaven of selfishness; and whether we appeal to our own or the French revolution, no two things will be found less alike than *patriotism* and *philanthropy*, however it may be the fashion to speak of them as the same. When the great business is to raise an empire, or to save one, what care we for the welfare of a minute inconsiderable part; and a part, too, not having the slightest relation to ourselves? In the scale of public utility, what comparison can there be between an ignorant mercenary soldier and an enlightened member of the grand national council, whose precious neck might, peradventure, be "destined to the cord," * in case of an unprosperous issue to the contest! It is for your Howards to "plunge into the infection of hospitals, to take guage and dimensions of misery, depression, and contempt;" it is for them "to survey the mansions of sorrow and pain, *to remember the forgotten, to attend to the neglected:*" Congress had far higher concerns. Possibly, I go too far; yet there were certainly prisoners in our hands, who, if not equal in amount to those in the hands of the enemy, would, at least, have obtained a partial exchange; perhaps, with proper management, the release of the whole of the men; and the obstacle arising from the situation of Lee might have been restricted to the officers. But this would not have done; there was an ugly rub in the affair: the time of enlistment having expired, our men were no longer soldiers, while those of the enemy were still subject to command, and in a condition immediately to take the field. Is it not probable, therefore, that we ourselves may owe a little to the manes of our devoted countrymen? But, should I still be

* An expression of General Gage's in some of his publications.

deemed censurable for the freedom of my observations, perhaps some of the letters of General Washington, whose discretion will not be questioned, might be brought to my aid. From these it might appear that the army was not always cherished with the most paternal care. Revolutions, however, are not the soil for any but the stoical virtues; and, counting every life that was lost, all the vile plebeian carcases which have served to dress the hot-bed, so rankly teeming with political *fungi*, is there a statesman of nerve, a hopeful pupil of the Montecello school, who would not say, that, upon every principle of political economy, our independence was cheaply purchased?*

But the situation of the suffering soldiery was not unattended to by their more fortunate officers; and the means of relieving them were the subject of our daily consideration. The most obvious was, to present an address to Sir William Howe; but it was suggested, that, as the condition of the men could not but be known to him, it was to be considered as designed; and that, therefore, to state it might be deemed impertinent, and be, in effect, injurious rather than beneficial to the end in view. This consideration, for a while, restrained any interference in their behalf; but, at length, it was resolved that a representation should be made. A memorial was prepared, and signed by Colonels Magaw, Miles, and At-

* A revolution in the aggregate is a no less glorious thing than a battle, but they both lose many of their charms on an analysis; and this must account for the puny features of my narrative, when compared with the noble countenance of general history. It ought also to plead for me with those who may charge me with *etalant au public notre misanthropie.*

lee, and they appointed me to deliver it. I accordingly repaired to head-quarters; and meeting with some gentlemen of the family at the door, I presented it to them, with a request that it might be submitted, as soon as convenient, to the commander-in-chief. They promised it should be laid before him without delay, and inquired my name and rank, as the contents of the paper, not being known, it might be supposed to relate to myself, and, at any rate, as, on the deliverer of a paper, there rests a certain degree of responsibility for its contents.

As soon as we had obtained a supply of cash we equipped ourselves generally in plain clothes, in which we were less conspicuous, and, consequently, more at ease. There was a very large store kept by one Coffin; in which, it was confidently said, Sir William Howe had a concern. From its containing the best assortment of goods, we gave it our custom; and I accordingly called there one day to buy some cloth and other articles; but, as my gold had been clipped, it could not be taken, and I left the store with an apprehension that my coin would be useless to me. Very soon after, however, Mr Coffin contrived to let me know that he had waved his objection, and that my money would be received; and, after this, I found myself a welcome customer for all of it I could spare.

Although there must have been in New York a number of refugees from Philadelphia, I presume they did not go much abroad, as I do not remember ever meeting one of them in the street; and the only one who ventured to call upon us was Colonel William Allen, already mentioned. He came to our lodging once or twice, in the evening. His situation was an extremely awkward one. In civil contests there seems no medium; and

neither side will tolerate neutrals. Having borne arms with us, he had not the merit of an orthodox Tory with the British, neither had he any claim to the Whiggism of the day, having renounced the cause of independence, and associated his fortunes with those of the enemy. In this predicament, however exempt from personal animosity we might be, there could be nothing cordial or free in our intercourse; it admitted only of a constrained and formal civility. I have little doubt, however, that Mr Allen's personal feelings were, at this time, more with us than his new friends. As I have infinitely more satisfaction in recollecting and recording acts of generosity than of intolerance, I cannot omit to note the attention I received from Mr Heathcote Johnson, of Amboy. This gentleman used to spend a good deal of his time in Philadelphia, had lodged at my mother's, and consequently remembered me, though much younger than himself. Meeting him one day in the street, he stopped me, and in a very friendly manner invited me to spend a few weeks with him at Amboy. This I could on no account have consented to, had I been at liberty to leave New York; but that not being the case, I availed myself of this restriction in declining his invitation. He replied that it might be got over, and that if I would favour him with my company, he had no doubt but that he had sufficient influence to obtain an extension of my limits. I was now obliged to decline his civility in more positive terms, though with a due impression of the liberality and kindness which had prompted it.

Other attentions, of a character not wholly dissimilar, as coming from the royal side, we could well have dispensed with. These were from Captain Davenport and Colonel Houssacker, quondam Whigs, and officers of

our army. The first, originally appointed a lieutenant in our regiment, had, by the promotion of two of our captains to the station of *aids-de-camp*, and of our major to the lieutenant-colonelcy of a new battalion, risen to the command of a company, as had also Tudor and Edwards, the latter already spoken of as my first lieutenant. This Davenport was an Irishman, who had been but a short time in Philadelphia; but by means of good connections there, an air of the world, and a consummate degree of effrontery, he had obtained not only a commission, but much consequence. He dressed well, and had a plausible exterior, but was found wholly destitute of honour and principle. After our retreat from Long Island, he remained in New York, either sick, or pretending to be so, and though repeatedly urged and commanded to join the regiment, he staid there until the British took possession of it. He was certainly a voluntary captive, if not a deserter; and there can be little doubt that he had renounced our cause, and made his peace with the enemy. He notwithstanding came to see us, and wished to be sociable as formerly, affecting to consider himself as a prisoner, and alleging, in proof of it, his confinement in the provost prison, where I believe he had been a short time. We understood him, but, as we had no absolute certainty of his baseness, we did not think it necessary to discard him; for as he frequented the coffeehouse, mixed with the British army and Tories, we often received intelligence through him, that we could not otherwise have obtained; and as he cared as little for one side as the other, his only objects being whole bones and an adherence to the prevailing one, he had no temptation to deceive us. As to Houssacker, he had been originally commissioned a major of Wayne's

battalion. He had, if I mistake not, been an adjutant of the Royal Americans, and was considered a capable disciplinarian. He was a German, or rather a man of no country or any country; a citizen of the world, a soldier of fortune, and a true mercenary. Thinking that our cause was going down rapidly, he saw no reason for adhering any longer to it; but came over to the enemy in the season of our extreme adversity, though he did not reach us until after the affairs of Trenton and Princeton. Not liking the name of a deserter, he called himself a prisoner, but certainly, if he was one, he had made much better terms than we had. He told us, however, that all was over; and that General Washington was reduced to the necessity of giving enormous bounties for only two or three weeks service; that by means of these, and haranguing his troops, he contrived to keep a few in the field, but that there was not the smallest doubt that the business was up, and America subdued. His inference was, that we ought immediately to make our peace. What do you shut yourselves up here for? said he, in his rattling manner, to Miles, Atlee, and Magaw, with whom he was acquainted. Why don't you go to the coffeehouse and mix with the British army as I do? They will use you well you may depend upon it. And, to be sure, the thing was easy enough; it was only to change sides, to cry *peccavi*, and receive forgiveness. Nevertheless, Colonel Houssacker made no proselytes to his opinion, or rather to his principles. Our affairs, it must be confessed, were at a very low ebb; in so far, at least, as success was dependant on sheer fighting. The immense multitude which had taken the field in the beginning of the summer was no longer to be found; it had vanished; three short months from the opening of

the campaign had melted it away. Perhaps not less than two-thirds of it had gone home; no inconsiderable part had been put *hors de combat* by the enemy; and the feeble remnant yet in arms was not calculated to inspire confidence.

Still we flattered ourselves that things were better than they appeared; and notwithstanding the dire bodings of Houssacker, our spirits were not a little raised by the handsome *coups de main* of Trenton and Princeton; both of which came to our knowledge, though imperfectly. The mere circumstance of showing the country that the enemy was not invincible, we deemed of incalculable importance. It was in vain that the truth was disguised in the papers: enough was learned from other channels, to convince us that some signal advantages had been obtained, and to induce a belief that the spirit of America was rising with the crisis. We were always anxious to see the newspapers, though, to be disgusted and mortified was the never failing result of a sight of them. But mercilessly as they *be-rebelled* us, the refugees, to our great delight, were not always spared; as may be collected from the following superlatively stupid paragraph, which appeared in the paper of Hugh Gaine. It was substantially, if not precisely, in these words:—"One of the rebels who had lately taken the benefit of the commissioners' proclamation, complaining to a British officer, that he was not treated as a gentleman, the officer replied:—I take a gentleman to be a man of honour, and as it is plain no rebel can be such, you, having been one, cannot expect to be treated better than you are." I felt a strong itch to cast a squib at this Bœotian attempt at a sarcasm; but the difficulty was to give it publicity. There was no getting it

into a newspaper, and detection would infallibly have obtained the author a lodging in the provost prison. Upon consulting with Edwards, it was agreed to endeavour to have it placed in a conspicuous part of the coffee-house; and, accordingly, in the evening, we procured a black boy, who, for the small fee of a quarter of a dollar or half a crown, undertook to lay, unobserved, the following production, sealed and addressed, "To the Officers of the British Army," in one of the boxes of the coffeeroom:—

"A friend to government presents his warmest and most submissive acknowledgments to his "very worthy and approved good masters," the gallant officers of the British army, *ever pre-eminent in mercy*,* for their manly and immortal triumph over the rebel, who had lately the unparalleled audacity to appear in the company of gentlemen—I say *gentlemen*, for from that witty and ingenious sarcasm, which appeared in Mr Gaines' last paper, it is incontestably proved that no rebel can be such; and it is therein no less clearly demonstrated, that every man who wears a red coat, and has the magnanimity to insult a person in his power, has every claim to that respectable character, which humanity, politeness, and true heroism, can confer. But, while I applaud the glory, I cannot but condemn the policy of the deed; for who knows, but that some of these poor shabby rascals may have the arrogance to call themselves gentlemen on their own dunghill, and even to venture upon retaliation? It is true, their cowardice and meanness of spirit have hitherto induced them to treat their prisoners with the utmost lenity and civility; but, from

* Words in a letter or proclamation of General Gage while at Boston.

the spirit of enterprise they have lately discovered, it is much to be feared, that they may, one day, pluck up courage enough to look a British officer in the face, or even to insult a captive.

"But I wander from my point, which was merely to celebrate this illustrious exploit, which far transcends the most heroic achievements of your ancestors. How shall I express my satisfaction of your conduct? In a word, I am dumb with admiration, and "in silence muse your praise."

We remained in ignorance of the issue of our machination until the following evening, when Davenport calling upon us, immediately testified by his countenance, (for he was not an unpleasant rogue,) that some amusing mischief had occurred. "You are a couple of pretty fellows," said he to Edwards and myself; "you have made a devil of an uproar at the coffeehouse!" We affected not to know what he meant, but he insisted upon it, that it was by us, and us alone, that a letter had been addressed to the British officers, which had set some of them raving mad. We found he had seen it, as he mentioned its contents. Some of the officers, he told us, only laughed at it, and said it was very well done, while others were so outrageous, as to put up a notice in the coffeeroom, importing, that "no *white-washed rebel* should presume to set his foot there again, under pain of being turned or kicked out;" for they supposed it to proceed from a refugee. Davenport judged better; and was persuaded that we were its authors; though we dissembled so well that he appeared at length to doubt. We were highly tickled at the success of the contrivance, but knew better than to put ourselves into the power of a man so unprincipled. He several times afterwards returned to the

charge, persisting in his assertion that the letter was ours; but we were so guarded that he was never able to extort from us an admission that we knew any thing of the matter: To have gotten into the clutches of Conyngham would have been paying too dearly for our joke.

This Conyngham was the provost-marshal, and, by the concurrence of all who had been under his dominion, he was a fellow that would not have disgraced the imperial throne of the Cæsars in the darkest days of Roman tyranny, nor the republic of France at the most refulgent era of jacobinism. A just respect for the enlightened and moral policy of our rulers forbids my carrying the adaptation further. Davenport himself bore testimony to his villany; one of whose traits was, that, in the evening, he would traverse his domain with a whip in his hand, sending his prisoners to bed with the ruffian-like *Tattoo* of *Kennel, ye sons of bitches! Kennel, G—d damn ye!* Colonel Ethen Allen, too, in the *Narrative of his Captivity*, says, that "he was as great a rascal as the army could boast of," with the single exception of Joshua Loring, the commissary of prisoners; and he winds up a most violent, and possibly not ill-deserved, invective against the commissary in the following energetic and characteristic strain of eloquence. "He (meaning Loring) is the most mean-spirited, cowardly, deceitful, and destructive animal in God's creation below; and legions of infernal devils, with all their tremendous horrors, are impatiently ready to receive Howe and him, with all their detestable accomplices, into the most exquisite agonies of the hottest regions of hell-fire."

Should this language be thought too highly wrought, it should be remembered that few have ever more se-

verely felt the hand of arbitrary power than Allen; and that he had but recently emerged from the provost guard, to which, for some alleged infringement of parole, he, and Major Otho H. Williams, afterwards General Williams, a very gallant, and already distinguished, officer, had been committed. Allen had been brought from Halifax to New York, a short time before the taking of Fort Washington, and was admitted to parole when we were. His figure was that of a robust, large-framed man, worn down by confinement and hard fare; but he was now recovering his flesh and spirits; and a suit of blue clothes, with a gold laced hat that had been presented to him by the gentlemen of Cork, enabled him to make a very passable appearance for a rebel colonel. He used to show a fracture in one of his teeth, occasioned by his twisting off with it, in a fit of anger, the nail which fastened the bar of his handcuffs; and which drew, from one of the astonished spectators, the exclamation of "Damn him, can he eat iron?" I had become well acquainted with him, and have more than once heard him relate his adventures, while a prisoner, before being brought to New York, exactly corresponding both in substance and language, with the narrative he gave the public in the year 1779. I have seldom met with a man possessing, in my opinion, a stronger mind, or whose mode of expression was more vehement and oratorical. His style was a singular compound of local barbarisms, scriptural phrases, and oriental wildness; and though unclassic, and sometimes ungrammatical, it was highly animated and forcible. In the following sentence of his narrative, though it is not, perhaps, strictly correct in its construction, there is, to me, a flash of moral pathos not unworthy a Robertson:—

"When the fleet," says he, "consisting of about forty-five sail, including five men of war, sailed from the Cove (of Cork) with a fresh breeze, the appearance was beautiful, abstracted from the unjust and bloody designs they had in view." Notwithstanding that Allen might have had something of the insubordinate, lawless frontier spirit in his composition, having been in a state of hostility with the government of New York before the war of the revolution, he appeared to me to be a man of generosity and honour; several instances of which occur in his publication, and one, not equivocal, came under my own observation. General Washington, speaking of him in an official letter of May the 12th 1788, observes, with a just discrimination, that there was an original something in him which commanded admiration.

The representation which had been submitted to General Howe, in behalf of the suffering prisoners, was more successful than had been expected. About a week, I think, after its delivery, the memorialists were given to understand, that their statement and propositions had been considered by Sir William Howe; and that he was disposed to accede to them. These were, if I mistake not, that the men should be sent within our lines where they should be receipted for, and an equal number of the prisoners in our hands returned in exchange. Policy, no less than humanity, recommended the measure; since our men, no longer soldiers and too debilitated for service, even should they incline to reenlist, gave a claim to sound men, immediately fit to take the field; and there was, moreover, great danger, that, if they remained in New York, the disease, with which they were infected, might be spread throughout the city. That these considerations had their weight

in the favourable result of the application, cannot be doubted. At any rate, hope was admitted into the mansions of despair: the prison doors were thrown open; and the soldiers, who were yet alive and capable of being moved, were conveyed to our nearest posts, under the care of our regimental surgeons, to them a fortunate circumstance, since it enabled them to exchange the land of bondage for that of liberty, and to return to the bosom of their families and friends. Among these was Dr M'Henry, with whom, from a residence in the same house, I was becoming intimate, though I had been but little acquainted with him before. The mention of this gentleman brings along with it the recollection of my obligation to him for his kindness and medical cure of me under the attack of a quinsy, but a very few days before he left us.

Immediately after the release of our men, a new location was assigned to us; and on the 22d of January, (1777,) as I find from Ethen Allen's narrative, though my recollection would have placed it in the middle of February, we were removed to Long Island, and by our parole restricted to a district, consisting of Flatbush, Newlots, Flatlands, and Gravesend, at each of which places a part of us were billeted on the inhabitants by Commissary Loring, for the stipulated sum of two dollars a head per week. What induced our removal from New York I never learned: but without any inclination to assign undue importance to a trifle, it is not improbable that the squib thrown into the coffeehouse, as already mentioned, might have had its influence in bringing about the measure. Whatever some of the British officers might have thought, the refugees and Tories could have had no doubt of the quarter whence it came. Its

tenor, and still more its consequences, could not but have been both offensive and mortifying to them; and their feelings were entitled to the attention of Sir William Howe, whose protection they had sought. In addition to this, it is probable that in other respects we did not sufficiently conform to the state of humiliation, in which it was the policy to place us. We took the full latitude of our parole, traversing the streets in all directions with a good deal of assurance; and once when the Teawater pond was frozen over and covered with British officers, who thought themselves skaters, a few of us were audacious enough to mingle in the exercise, from the malicious pleasure, more than any thing else, of showing them what arrant bunglers they were. But to whatever cause it might be owing, it was to the generality of us a most unwelcome step. It was placing another river between us and our homes; and though, in fact, we should be as visible to the eyes of Congress on Long Island as at New York, we could not but consider the measure as unpropitious to an exchange; and we regarded our transportation across the East river as a consignation to "dumb forgetfulness," where, no longer thought of by friends or foes, we were destined to waste the best of our days in a state of hopeless captivity.

CHAPTER X.

Situation of the Officers at Long Island—Society and Manners—Hardships of Captivity—The Author's Mother unexpectedly arrives at New York—Narrative of her Excursion—Procures the Author's Liberty on Parole.

FLATBUSH was the place assigned for the officers of our regiment, as well as those of Magaw's. Here also were stationed Colonels Miles, Atlee, Rawlins, and Major Williams, the indulgence of arranging ourselves agreeably to our respective circles of acquaintance having been granted by Mr Loring, of whom, for my own part, I have nothing hard to say. It is true he laboured under that "curse of great ones," in having the "forked plague" fixed on him by Sir William: Yet as there is little doubt, that he considered himself amply indemnified by his office, he was not "robbed at all." Mr Forrest and myself were billeted on a Mr Jacob Suydam. His house was pretty large, consisting of buildings which appeared to have been erected at different times, the front and better part of which was in the occupation of Mr Theophilact Bache and his family from New York. Though we were in general civilly enough received, it cannot be supposed that we were very welcome to our Low Dutch hosts, whose habits of living were extremely parsimonious, and whose winter provision was barely sufficient for themselves. Had they been sure of receiving the two

dollars a week, it might have reconciled them to the measure; but payment appeared to them to depend on the success of our cause, (Congress or ourselves being looked upon as the paymasters,) and its failure, in their eyes, would in both cases induce a stoppage of payment. They were, however, a people who seemed thoroughly disposed to submit to any power which might be set over them; and whatever might have been their propensities or demonstrations at an earlier stage of the contest, they were now the dutiful and loyal subjects of his Majesty George the Third; and entirely obedient to the behests of their military masters in New York. As it was at the instance of these that we were saddled upon them, they received us with the best grace they could put on. Their houses and beds we found clean; but their living extremely poor, and well calculated to teach the luxurious, how infinitely less than their pampered appetites require, is essential to the sustentation of life. In the apostrophe of Lucan,

O prodiga rerum
Luxuries, nunquam parvo contenta paratu,
Et quæsitorum terra pelagoque ciborum
Ambitiosa fames, et lautæ gloria mensæ!
Discite quam parvo liceat producere vitam.

Thus translated by Rowe:

Behold! ye sons of luxury, behold!
Who scatter in excess your lavish gold;
You who the wealth of frugal ages waste,
T' indulge a wanton supercilious taste;
For whom all earth, all ocean are explor'd
To spread the various proud voluptuous board,
Behold! how little thrifty nature craves.

A sorry wash, made up of a sprinkling of bohea, and the darkest sugar on the verge of fluidity, with half baked bread, fuel being among the scarcest articles at Flatbush, and a little stale butter, constituted our breakfast. At our first coming, a small piece of pickled beef was occasionally boiled for dinner, but, to the beef, which was soon consumed, succeeded *clippers* or clams, and our unvaried supper was *supon* or mush, sometimes with skimmed milk, but more generally with buttermilk blended with molasses, which was kept for weeks in a churn, as swill is saved for hogs. I found it, however, after a little use, very eatable; and supper soon became my best meal. The table company consisted of the master of the house, Mr Jacob Suydam, an old bachelor, a young man, a shoemaker of the name of Rem Hagerman, married to Jacob's niece, who, with a mewling infant in her arms, never failed to appear. A black boy too was generally in the room; not as a waiter, but as a kind of *enfant de maison*, who walked about, or took post in the chimney corner with his hat on, and occasionally joined in the conversation. It is probable, that, but for us, he would have been placed at the table, and that it had been the custom before we came. Certain it is, that the idea of equality was more fully and fairly acted upon in this house of a British subject, than ever I have seen it practised by the most vehement declaimers for the rights of man among ourselves. It is but fair, however, to mention, that I have never been among our transcendent republicans of Virginia and her dependencies. But notwithstanding some unpleasant circumstances in our establishment, every member of the family, the black fellow, to whom we had been the cause of some privations, excepted, was exceedingly

courteous and accommodating. Rem Hagerman, and *Yonichy* his wife, gave themselves no airs; nor was our harmony with uncle Jacob ever interrupted, but on a single occasion, when, soured a little by I know not what provocation, he made a show of knocking down Forrest with a pair of yarn stockings he had just drawn from his legs, as he sat in the chimney corner one evening preparing for bed. It was, indeed, but an offer, though it might, for ought I know, have amounted to an assault in law, as Jacob was not so far from the person menaced, but that the feet of the stockings, if held by the other extremity, and projected from an extended arm, might possibly have reached him; and a pair of long worn yarn stockings might, from daily alluvion, have acquired somewhat of the properties of a cudgel. But moments of peevishness were allowable to our host; since, though we had for some time been consuming his provisions, he had never seen a penny of our money, and it was somewhat doubtful, to say the truth, whether he ever would; for, considering the contractors for our boarding liable for it, we never thought of paying it ourselves. As the Low Dutch are a people little known in Pennsylvania, and more especially, as it is my avowed intention to advert to the character of the time, this sketch of their domestic economy and manners may not be thought impertinent. In a word, from what I saw of them on Long Island, I was led to consider them as a people, quiet and inoffensive beyond any I had seen; such, from whom no enthusiastic efforts, either of good or evil tendency, were to be looked for; who were neither prolific of Catos nor Catilines; and who, had they been the sole occupants of this great continent of ours, would still have been colonists, and never known what it

was to be independent republicans. Their religious, like their other habits, were unostentatious and plain; and a silent grace before meat prevailed at the table of Jacop Suydam. When we were all seated, he suddenly clapped his hands together, threw his head on one side, closed his eyes, and remained mute and motionless for about a minute. His niece and nephew following his example; but with such an eager solicitude that the copied attitude should be prompt and simultaneous, as to give an air of absurdity to what might otherwise have been very decent. Although little of the vernacular accent remained on the tongues of these people, they had some peculiarities in their phraseology. Among these, instead of asking you to sit, or sit down to table, they invited you to *sit by*, and this I even observed in General Schuyler, when I was at Lake George. It might be asked by a stickling New Yorker, if sit by is not as proper, and even more so, than sit down, which, in strictness, is a redundancy. A Philadelphian might admit it; but it would be no evidence of his want of candour, should he add, that it was, nevertheless, extremely awkward English.

The morning after our arrival at this place we encountered Mr Bache in the piazza, which extended the whole length of the building on the south side. His being an Englishman, and a determined royalist, did not prevent him from accosting us very civilly, and manifesting a disposition to maintain a friendly intercourse with us, notwithstanding the difference in our political sentiments. Having long resided in New York, he was acquainted with the grounds of the contest, and well knew that the opposition to the mother country was not confined to a low and desperate faction, as it was the fashion among the loyalists to represent it. He was aware that

his brother in Philadelphia (married to the daughter of Dr Franklin) had embraced the Whig side of the question, as well as others of the first respectability in America; and was, therefore, perfectly sensible that we were not the insignificant rebels which policy depicted us. But whatever was the motive, the behaviour of Mr Bache was altogether free from intolerance and party rancour. It was more, it was hospitable and kind. In addition to frequent invitations to tea, and to partake of his Madeira, to help us along a little, as he expressed it, in allusion to the mean fare of Jacob's table, I was indebted to him for the offer of his purse, although he neither knew me nor my connexions. As I stood in no need of it, I declined it; but with a due sense of the obligation the mere offer imposed. I availed myself, however, of the tender of his services in executing small commissions for me when he went to New York, which was almost every day; and, among these, he once negociated a bill of exchange in my favour on Major Small. It might have been this circumstance which led the Major to a knowledge that my mother (at whose house he had long, and at different times, been a lodger, as already mentioned) had sons in the American army. For, on conversing once with Captain Hutchins, in London, on the subject of the war, he said to him, "Would you have believed it, Hutchins, that *Desdy* had two of her sons in arms against us?" But this fact could not have appeared quite so unnatural to the Captain as it did to the Major, since, not very long after, for his attachment to the American cause, he was obliged to relinquish the British service, having first been arrested on a charge of treasonable practices. Captain Hutchins, I think, was a native of New Jersey. On his coming over to us, he was appointed to the post of

Geographer-general, which had probably been created for him. From his long and frequent residences in our house, he was domesticated in it. He was a worthy and a pious man; but one, who, in his continued complaints of the injustice of the British government, in not fully remunerating his services, betrayed but little knowledge of the world. Cæsar, it is true, sent Labienus his pay and baggage, when that officer thought proper to join the standard of Pompey; but this was an instance of singular generosity. If Captain Hutchins, after spending the greater part of his life in the British army, chose to renounce it for that of America, he should, at least, have granted to his old employers the privilege of some ill humour, and not have been too outrageous, even though some pecuniary deficiency had been its consequence. What was patriotism in his eyes—in theirs was ingratitude; and the right of thinking was mutual. But if these vile monarchists were unjust to a relinquisher of their cause, what shall we say of the conduct of our own republican rulers to old officers, who have always been faithful? Comparing the destiny of many of these with that of the adherents to the British government, I fear we shall not all be able to say with Rousseau: *Heureux, toutes les fois que je medité sur les gouvernemens, de trouver toujours dans mes recherches, de nouvelles raisons d'aimer celui de mon pays.* *

Besides Mr Bache, there were, at this time, several New Yorkers with their families, residing at Flatbush. Of these, Mr Axtle was apparently the first in point of

* Happy, so often as I contemplate other governments, to find, in my researches, as I always do, new reasons for loving that of my own country!

wealth and importance. I think he had been of the governor's council. He was neatly seated at a country house at the entrance of the village from New York; and I had once the honour of supping with him, together with eight or ten of my fellow-prisoners, that had been selected on the occasion. What the object of this single attention was could not be divined; but after partaking of the hospitality, it would be wrong to ascribe it to other than a liberal motive, and, after having obtained a footing in his house, it was our own fault that it was not improved. In the family of Mr Axtle there was a Mr Frederick Depeyster, a young man, better known in the village by the fondling appellation of Feady, and two young ladies, all of whom were the relations of Mrs Axtle. One of these, a Miss Shipton, had so much toleration for our cause, as, some time after, to marry a Major Giles of our army. Next in consequence to Mr Axtle might be placed Mr Matthews, the Mayor of New York, who divided his time between the village and the city, in each of which he had a house. There were also here a Mr Sherbroke and a Mr Jauncey; and Major Moncrieff of the British army, a relation by marriage to Mr Bache, spent much of his time here, where he had a daughter. But the principal personage, in a Low Dutch village, appears to be the *Domine* or minister; and Flatbush, at this time, revered her Domine Reubell, a rotund, jolly-looking man, a follower of Luther, and a Tory, on whom were billeted Colonels Atlee and Miles. At Flatlands, an adjacent hamlet, there was also a Domine Van Zinder, a disciple of Calvin, and a Whig. He was in person, as well as principles, a perfect contrast to Mr Reubell, being a lean and shrivelled little man, with silver flowing locks which "streamed like

a meteor to the troubled air," as he whisked along with great velocity in his chair through Flatbush. Recalling his figure and triangular sharp-pointed hat, I have before me the express image of the learned Knickerbocker's William the Testy. This latter Domine was distinguished by a species of pulpit eloquence, which might be truly said to "bring matters home to men's business and bosoms." Mr Bache assured me, that, in once descanting on the wily arts of the devil, in seducing and ensnaring sinners, he likened him to my landlord, Jacob Suydam, sneaking and skulking about to get a shot at a flock of snipes; small birds of the plover kind, which, at certain seasons, are very numerous on the beach; and in shooting of which, old Jacob, it seems, was eminently skilful and successful. I was indebted to Mr Bache for much other local information; and was gratified to find, that our defence of Fort Washington was considered by the British officers as far from pusillanimous or disgraceful.

There was a fatiguing sameness in our occupations for which we had no cure. During a residence of about five months upon Long Island, I was but once beyond the limits to which we were restricted, and this was to dine with Mr Wallace, one of the principal merchants of New York, who now resided at Jamaica. Together with Major West and Captain Lenox, I had been recommended to him by the house of the Nesbits, or of Conyngham and Nesbit, (I am not sure of the firm,) in Philadelphia, to whose friendship I was also indebted, as it was unsolicited, for a letter of credit on him, which, however, I had no occasion to use. An instance, by the by, of the liberal uses of that commerce, which, in the enlarged and enlightened mind of Mr Jefferson, only

tends to corrupt and narrow the heart; and to sink those employed in it into the most worthless part of the community. It was this circumstance which procured us an invitation to dine with him; to enable us to do which, he had obtained for us a temporary dispensation from our parole, from Mr Loring. We cheerfully availed ourselves of the little variety this visit would afford us, and waited upon Mr Wallace, who entertained us with much hospitality. But there was one incident, I must confess, I did not altogether relish: Perhaps it was designed as a delicate mode of assuring us that the civility we received was not to be considered, in any degree, as a toleration of our principles. After dinner, the son of our entertainer, a boy of about seven or eight years of age, came into the room, and his father, putting a glass of wine into his hand, asked him what he drank: "Church and King," pronounced the little fellow in an audible voice. I did not know, until now, that I had made so much progress in republicanism. Although loyalty to the king had but lately been an ardent feeling in America, and had certainly been mine; and although I had recently contemplated becoming an Episcopalian, from an idea that it was the duty of all men to conform to the established religion of their country, where, to their minds, there were no essential objections to its tenets—yet the sentiment appeared to me degrading and slavish in the extreme. This is an instance how much our opinions are swayed by our passions and habits, and a corroboration of the remark of Lord Chatham, "That the first blood drawn in the contest would prove an *irritabile vulnus*, a wound that could not be healed, but which would fester and mortify the whole body."

Upon our first arrival at Jamaica, after putting up our

horses at an inn, we concluded to take a ramble through the town before we went to Mr Wallace's. We had, accordingly, strolled to nearly the end of the main street, when we observed a soldier, or non-commissioned officer, coming after us. We suspected his business to be with us, when, approaching with due military etiquette, he gave us to understand that he came by order of Colonel Fanning, who desired to speak with us at his quarters. We immediately returned with him, and were conducted to the colonel, who informed us that he presumed we were prisoners; and if so, as we were without our limits, he conceived it his duty to inquire into the cause of it. We told him that we came to dine with Mr Wallace, who, we understood, had obtained permission for us so to do, from the commissary of prisoners. Had we any certificate or evidence of this? he asked. We replied, we had not, as we had entirely referred the matter to Mr Wallace, and relied upon his assurance that we were privileged. Finding that he still seemed to consider it a dubious point, whether we ought to be detained or set at liberty, we thought it time to assert ourselves a little, and told him that it was a matter of the utmost indifference to us what part he might adopt. After a moment's consideration, however, he thought proper to dismiss us. This Mr Fanning had been secretary to Governor Tryon, and now commanded a regiment of new levies, stationed at that place. Though we assumed some cavalier airs on the occasion, it cannot be said that the colonel had exceeded his duty, or betrayed any wantonness of authority.

As Mr Wallace was from Ireland, it probably would not have comported with the hospitality of his table to have suffered us to leave it unexhilarated. He pushed

the bottle, therefore, and detained us, anti-church and king-men, as we were, until we had received as much of his Madeira as we could carry home with any tolerable convenience.

Among the very few incidents which occurred to vary the wearisome sameness of Flatbush was the arrival, one day, of two or three officers of the British guards, to pay their respects to Captain Richardson of Magaw's regiment, who, they had but lately learned, was the brother of Colonel Francis Richardson, already mentioned in the early part of these Memoirs. I did not see them, but the circumstance was related to me by Edwards, who was cruelly mortified in the reflection, that a worse specimen in outward appearance of the officers of our army could hardly have been found, than in the person of Captain Richardson. In addition to a mean slouching figure, he was disgustingly slovenly, and wretchedly calculated to support either the dignity of his brother or our army. Whether he was unlucky enough to be found by his visitors, I do not recollect; but it was unquestionably the interest of those who were piqued for the reputation of the American service to keep him out of sight, or, at least, to have him furbished up before appearing. As it was the policy of the enemy to vilify us, and depreciate our cause, by representing its supporters as vulgar and contemptible, it consequently stimulated us to appear to as much advantage as possible. Those who may think we attached too much importance to a good exterior, in the situation in which we were, know nothing of the qualifications respected among military men; and they would betray no less ignorance of the common feelings of mankind, should they doubt that the respectability of our army was not of vast importance to

our undertaking: as much, if not more, I will venture to affirm, that even the respectability of Congress, a small invisible body, not possessing the means of sensible impression on the mass of the people. In civil contests, it is highly requisite for the party in opposition to government to counteract the advantage of recognized authority, by an appearance that may raise them above contempt, than which nothing can be more unfavourable to them. This was strikingly exemplified, at least, in our revolution; and is another instance of its dissimilarity to that of the French, whose object being the subversion of society, found its early strength to consist in the vaunted baseness of its partizans.

We had now been captive nearly seven months, and the obstacle to an exchange seemed in no likelihood to be removed. We had seen the letters which had passed upon the subject between the commanders of the two armies; and although we were satisfied with the reasoning on our side, and consoled, in some degree, by the feeling manner in which our situation was adverted to by General Washington, we were far from being reconciled to our fate. Notwithstanding that Lee's being considered as a deserter by Sir William Howe was the ostensible bar, it occurred to me, that the reluctance felt by Congress to restoring, without an equivalent, the British soldiers in their possession, was their principal motive for disagreeing to any cartel that should be attended with that consequence. The rash, though not undeserved letter to the Council of Safety, too, stared full in the face, us, the unlucky wights who had been indiscreet enough to put our names to it: and, as the council might be supposed to have some influence in the general concerns of the confederation, we sometimes, in our

desponding fits, conceived ourselves no less the victims of resentment than of policy. Before our removal to Long Island, Colonel Miles had been permitted to visit his family in Pennsylvania; and as he had been charged with some proposals relative to an exchange of prisoners, he had an interview with General Howe, either upon his going in or his return. On this occasion, he received no very favourable impression of the literary talents or critical acumen of his excellency, who, on commenting on the communications of General Washington, among other shrewd remarks, observed that they were very *badly compiled.* For the General himself he expressed much respect, but lamented that he was surrounded by a set of lawyers who led him astray, and who contributed to, if they did not solely cause, this bad *compilation* of his letters. Who *compiled* for Sir William is not ascertained, that I know of, but I believe it was generally admitted, that, in this particular, he was not better served than General Washington. General Lee tells us, that "M'Kensey, Balfour, and Galloway, were his scribes; and that all the damned stuff which was issued to the astonished world was theirs."

Captivity is justly comprehended in the catalogue of human woes; its poignancy is recognized by Shakespeare in his play of Othello, and it is among the calamities which are particularly adverted to in the excellent liturgy of the Church of England. What peculiar sickness of the heart it is, may be collected from Rowe's beautiful allusion to it, in the wailings of Calista:—

> "So the poor captive in a foreign realm,
> Stands on the shore and sends his wishes back,
> To the dear native land from whence he came."

How often have I done this from the summit of the

commanding heights which bounded our district towards Brooklyn, and afforded an extensive view of East Jersey. Here, like Tom Jones, from the top of Mazard Hill, and for a similar cause, have I frequently reflected with a sigh upon the vast tract of land which lay between me and my home. For, although the particular object of my contemplation was not within my sight, I had, as was observed of Jones by his discerning companion, a pleasure in looking that way. In my melancholy hours, I had made this spot the scene of an elegiac essay, where, having located my forlorn captive, about sun-set, I say :—

Here, on the lofty summit, as he stood,
His wistful eyes still sought the western shore;
There, ting'd with gold, the distant hills he view'd,
Where yet her sons fair freedom's ensign bore.

My unaffected conviction of the poverty of my poetic talent forbids a recital of more than a few stanzas of my fragmentary production, which are selected, as well because they serve to show my impressions at the time, in regard to the cruelty of the enemy, as that they confer attributes on General Washington, which seem precisely those which are the award of the present day, and will be that of all posterity. After a bitter apostrophe to Howe for the imputed murder of our soldiery, the doom-denouncing bard proceeds :—

For heaven is just, and though the dazzling rays
Of royal favour dignify thy name,
Yet dire remorse shall tear thy future days,
And history damn thee to eternal fame.
Then, too, shall truth impartially record
The generous efforts of the patriot few,
Rous'd by their wrongs to draw th' avenging sword;
And crush fell tyranny's destructive crew.

First, in the deathless animating page,
Thy fame, great Washington! illustrious shines,
Unsullied by the breath of party rage,
More brilliant than Golconda's glitt'ring mines.

For conduct, dignity, and valour fam'd,
Midst dark adversity serenely great,
Thy dauntless soul with godlike ardour flam'd,
And soar'd above the scowling blasts of fate.

'Twas then, majestic Delaware! thy wave,
Became immortal from the splendid dead, &c.

When the attempt to settle a cartel had proved abortive, it was rumoured that we were to be shipped for England; and this we should generally have preferred to remaining where we were. We figured to ourselves something of the nature of an adventure in the measure; and, from what Ethan Allen had told us, we did not doubt that we should find in it some sources of gratification. The step, however, was not rationally to be looked for: there could be no inducement to it, though there might be for the threat, upon the supposition that we had connexions powerful enough to prevail with Congress for an exchange. The most sanguine among us had now given up the hope of a deliverance; and, in addition to the pining tediousness of our situation, that engine for breaking hearts, the provost prison, was ever open to receive the victims of brutal insolence and malignity. That this was no chimera, the following incident will prove:—Some fellows, one morning, on the road to New York market with fish, were stopped by Captain Lenox and two other officers, Lieutenant Wright of Maryland, and Lieutenant Stewart of Delaware, I think, who wished to buy some; but they were told, by the fishmongers, that they would not sell to rebels. This produced reproachful language on both

sides, when the officers, laying hold of the fish, began to bandy them about the jaws of the ragamuffians that had insulted them. A complaint was immediately lodged with General Robertson; the accused were escorted, by a guard, to New York, and, on the statement of the complainants, being found in aggression, they were required to make acknowledgments to the injured; which, refusing to do, they were forthwith consigned to the custody of the provost marshal. With him they remained for two or three weeks; but, at length, were released, without being held to the concessions first demanded. Conyngham, it seems, had used them well; partly owing, probably, to instructions from General Robertson, and, partly, to Mr Lenox's being well supplied with money and appearing of consequence, which, better than any thing else, is calculated to mollify the heart of a genuine caitiff in power.

It was a generally received opinion among us, that a close confinement would be a virtual cancelling of our parole; and hence, when these gentlemen were returned to their district, without the exaction of a new one, they submitted it to a board of officers, whether or not they would be justified in going away. I forget what officers composed the board; I only recollect that Colonel Ethan Allen was one, and that his opinion was that of a man of honour and sound casuist. He admitted, that they had a right to escape from their actual confinement, but that now the case was altered; and that, although no new parole had been given, yet the obligation of the former one should be considered as returning on their enlargement; and that they were under the same restraint, in point of honour, that they had been before their commitment to the provost. This was also the

opinion of the board, and unanimously approved, as well by the gentlemen immediately interested as by others. I have principally mentioned this circumstance, to shew, that Allen, however turbulent a citizen under the old *regime*, was not the vulgar ruffian that the New York royalists represented him.

While in this state of dejection, from the unavailing negotiation to establish a cartel, an incident, as little expected as any other within the compass of possibility, took place.——It was, to the best of my recollection, early in the month of June, that one day meeting with Mr Christian Huck, the lawyer, a refugee from Philadelphia, at Flatbush, he informed me that my mother was in New York. The astonishment, and even incredulity, I expressed by my manner, induced him to repeat his assurance that such was the fact, that he had seen her and conversed with her, and that I might expect to see her at this place, either on the present or succeeding day. Although aware that she yielded to none in the ardour of maternal affection, yet nothing could be more unlooked for than this event; and even the pleasure I promised myself in seeing her did not compensate for the disapprobation I felt at the imprudence of the undertaking; improper in every point of view in which I could contemplate it. When I reflected upon the difficulties she had to encounter, and her timidity in every mode of travelling, and particularly by water, which would be occasionally necessary in her journey, I could not but conclude, that there must be some very extraordinary motive for it; and my desire to meet her was mixed with a painful anxiety.

She arrived the day after she had been announced, having hired a person at Brooklyn to bring her from

thence in a chair. Her only object, I found, was to see me, and to endeavour to procure my release on parole; as she had heard that we were harshly treated, and on the point of being sent to England. The fatigue and anxiety of her journey had so far overcome her, that, on reaching New York, she had been ill for a few days, and had put herself under the care of a Dr Carlton or Charlton, who, though he appeared to have acquitted himself well enough as a physician, had extremely shocked and disgusted her by his intolerant toryism. Upon finding what her errand was, he seemed to take pleasure in confirming to her, that the prisoners were to be sent to England, and hanged there, he added, for aught that he knew; but that, at any rate, it was what they richly deserved. She had been visited, I learned, by the Allens, or some of them, Huck, as already mentioned, and some others from Philadelphia, who were anxious to hear what was going on in that quarter. Upon mentioning her business to Mr John Allen, he advised her not to be scrupulous as to the terms of my release, since the business would very soon be over, and a pardon be all that could be obtained by any who had borne arms. But before stating what took place on this side of the lines, let us go back a little to what occurred on the other.

The projected undertaking had been long in contemplation; and the friends as well as members of the family had been consulted on the occasion. Some advised it, but the greater part disapproved of it. Having acquaintances on both sides, my mother indiscriminately took their opinions; and so far as party feeling appeared to enter into the question, it was observable, that the Tories were for the measure, the Whigs against it. The former were, of course, advocates for the benigni-

ty of General Howe; and as they were incredulous, or affected incredulity, as to the ill treatment of prisoners, they would have rejoiced in her success, as an instance to the contrary. The latter did not, in the first place, think the application would be of any avail; and, as upon this particular occasion, they were in the predicament which, Rochefoucault tells us, all men are in at all times, viz. that of "discovering something in the misfortunes of their best friends, which does not entirely displease them," they would, probably, have been better satisfied that we should all have grown old in captivity, than have become vouchers for British clemency by an immediate release: As it was inconvenient for Congress to exchange us, it appeared to them much better that we should remain prisoners until the conclusion of the war, if peradventure we should so long live, than, by coming out on parole, furnish the Tories with a circumstance they might turn to the advantage of their side. So stern a thing is patriotism, when the comfort of third persons only is concerned! As my mother, however, possessed too little of the Roman spirit to be duly moved by such magnanimous considerations, the feelings of nature prevailed, and she resolved on the enterprise. She purchased a horse and chair for the occasion, and set out for Philadelphia, her residence being at this time at Reading, to which place she had removed, with several other families of her acquaintance, in the preceding winter, when the enemy had penetrated through Jersey to the Delaware. On her arrival in the city, one Fisher, a Scotchman, and relation of my grandmother, was officious in tendering his service to drive her to New York. As he was a retailer of dry goods, his object, no doubt, was traffic; and to bring home with him

some scarce light articles in the chair box. The offer was accepted; they set off, and had nearly reached Princeton, when, to their great astonishment, they were overtaken by a detachment of cavalry, which had been sent in pursuit of them, with orders to arrest their progress. The cause was this. Fisher, it seems, was a Tory, either real or putative; and the fact having been made known to General Mifflin, who was then in the city, it had set him a fidgeting, and, as no one could exactly foresee the consequences that might result to the infant nation, should a suspected Scotch shopkeeper get out of Philadelphia into New York; the hue and cry on the occasion was proportionably eager and vehement. It cannot be denied, however, that the proceeding was quite in rule. The culprits were immediately taken into custody; but my mother's guilt being merely that of bad neighbourhood, (*nimium vicina Cremonæ,*) having been wholly ignorant of the political tenets of her companion, she was conducted to the quarters of General Sullivan, who commanded at this post. Here she remained until due order was taken in the premises, when she found, that, instead of proceeding on her journey, she was under the necessity of retracing her steps towards Philadelphia, under an escort of horse. When they had got back as far as Bristol, means were found for Mr Fisher, the only prisoner, to pursue his way, without the chair, with which he had been accommodated so far; and Colonel M'Ilvaine, an old and particular friend, and, indeed, connection of the family, kindly offering to accompany my mother to the headquarters of our army, from whence the proper measures might be taken for her proceeding into the British lines; her horse's head was once more turned towards New

York. They reached the hospitable mansion of Mr Vanhorne, of Boundbrook, on the evening of the day they set out. It fortunately turned out, that he had been acquainted with my father, and having connections in Brunswick, he furnished my mother with a letter of introduction, extremely useful to her on her arrival there. Passing over unimportant particulars, she was conducted with her horse and chair to the enemy's lines by Major Scull, who was then obliged to leave her, and commit her to the courtesy of some Hessian officers, who were on duty there. It happened, during the ceremony of the flag, that a gun was somewhere discharged on our side of the lines. This infringement of military etiquette was furiously resented by the German officers, who expressed themselves with a vehemence of gesture extremely alarming to my mother, who discovered what it related to from the frequent repetition of the words *flag of truce;* the only ones she understood. She supported herself as well as she could, under this inauspicious introduction into the hostile territory; and, remaining in her chair, her horse was led by a soldier to the quarters of General Matthew or Matthews, who commanded in Brunswick. Here she alighted, and was shown into a parlour, where, in a few minutes, were set before her a decanter of wine and some biscuits. Being faint, and much in need of refreshment, she helped herself to a biscuit, and drank two glasses of wine; the first having proved so cordial and restorative to her dejected spirits as to induce her to take a second. General Matthews did not keep her very long in waiting; and, on his appearing, being made acquainted with her object, and desire of being passed on to New York, as soon as might be convenient, he promised it

should be attended to: His manner was that of a man of humanity and perfect good breeding. Upon leaving the General's quarters, her first care was to deliver the letter of Mr Vanhorne. She readily found the house of the person to whom it was addressed, (I think Mr Clarkson,) was invited in, and seated alone in a parlour. There soon after came in two or three British officers, who, entering into conversation with the ease of men of fashion, gave her to understand that there had been a ball the preceding evening, at which had been the Miss Vanhornes, the ladies whom they now called to see. These gentlemen, one of whom was Sir John Wrottesley, were such frequent visitors at this house, that my mother, during her stay in it, became pretty well acquainted with them, as I found, upon her once meeting Sir John with Miss Susan Vanhorne, in the street of Flatbush. Accosting her in a very sociable manner, he adverted to the circumstance of her finding me, who had then the *honour* of being introduced to him; and less I cannot say, British baronet though he was, since his demeanour was truly gentlemanly and worthy of his rank. By the same means she had the opportunity of often seeing Colonel Donope, a Major Hendricks, and a Major Pauli, all of the German troops; the latter of whom was polite enough to take charge of her horse and chair; to promise to send them to Mr Vanhorne's, at Boundbrook, and, in the meantime, to supply the necessary forage.

There were five of the Miss Vanhornes, all handsome and well bred, who, not long after, with their mother, a widow lady, removed from this place to Flatbush. A Mr Clarkson, who was a connexion of theirs, if I mistake not, their uncle by marriage, and the very gentle-

man at whose house they staid at Brunswick, and at which my mother was so hospitably entertained, had a house also at Flatbush. Being a Whig, he had left it on the approach of the enemy; and it had been a good deal injured by the Germans. He was now permitted to return to it; and Mrs Vanhorne and her daughters came along with him. Perhaps the way to this measure was smoothed by the interest of the officers already mentioned; and ladies often are the means of mitigating the ferocities of war.

After being detained a week or more at Brunswick, my mother, with a number of other passengers, embarked in a sloop or shallop for New York. The vessel, in her passage, was fired upon by some of our people from the shore, but without injury to any one, and the destined port was at length attained without farther difficulty. Among the many unexpectedly agreeable circumstances of her situation at Brunswick, there were some unpleasant ones she had no means of avoiding. Although the political conversation of the British officers ought to have been restrained in the presence of the Miss Vanhornes, who had some relations in our service, it was sometimes such as to be extremely offensive to an American ear. An instance of this kind arose from the following circumstance: A young man, of our army, had been recently killed by the British cavalry, and his body so cruelly hacked and mangled by their sabres, that General Washington thought proper to send it in for their inspection. It was brought to the post of Sir George Osborne, who, with much admired *sang froid*, simply returned for an answer that *he was no coroner*. This circumstance was a theme of considerable merriment, and the *bon mot* of Sir George not a little applauded.

As Mr Beebe, with his family, had been latterly a good deal in New York, and, consequently, his part of Mr Suydam's house become less necessary to him, he permitted my mother to occupy it during her stay at Flatbush. This was highly convenient to her, and she became, in some degree, naturalized to her new situation. Her accustomed flow of good spirits returned; and, as she came pretty well supplied with cash, she contrived to get something better than *clippers* and *supon*; and to give one or two tea-drinkings, at which the *rebel clan*, that attended them, was honoured with the company of some of the Miss Vanhornes, avowed Whigs, notwithstanding their civility to the British officers. She also availed herself of the opportunity of learning from Major Williams the art of making Johnny cakes in the true Maryland fashion; and good part of an afternoon, I remember, was spent in the notable cookery. But these recreations did not interfere with the object of her expedition, and her design of getting me home. I, in vain, endeavoured to dissuade her from her purpose. She was resolved to prove the result of an application; and, in this view, in one of her first visits to New York, called upon Mr Galloway, who was supposed to have much influence at head-quarters. He spoke encouragingly of the attempt, and said, he had little doubt but it would succeed. What would be the proper mode of applying to Sir William Howe? she asked. By memorial, said Mr Galloway, at the same time, kindly offering to sketch one out for her if she chose it. As she could do no less than accept his offer, and thank him for it, he went to work, and, in a few minutes, produced what he said accorded with his ideas on the subject. He then read to her what he had written, purporting, that,

"Whereas Mrs —— had always been a true and faithful subject of his Majesty George the Third; and whereas her son, an inexperienced youth, had been deluded by the arts of designing men."——O, Sir, said she, that will never do; my son cannot obtain his release on these terms. Then, Madam, said he, somewhat peevishly, I can do nothing for you. She endeavoured to soften, as well as she could, the refusal to comply with what he had recommended, and left him a good deal depressed in her expectations. Fearful that, in her ardour to obtain her object, she might be tempted to go too far, I had cautioned her against yielding to any improper concessions; and had solemnly declared that I would accept of my enlargement upon no other terms than those of an exchange or a parole. This first discomfiture did not induce an abandonment of her pursuit: In a matter, which interested her feelings, no one was more persevering; and she continued to advise with every one she thought likely to have influence, and a disposition to assist her. Among the rest, she addressed herself to a Mr Andrew Elliot, a person of respectability, and well known both in Philadelphia and New York. His advice was, that she should go at once in person to General Howe. Those you have applied to, or may apply to, said he, have little or no interest, though they may not choose to say so; but a direct personal application to the commander-in-chief will, I verily believe, be propitious to your wishes. She had been some time between Flatbush and New York before this was suggested to her; and she secretly resolved to take an opportunity of putting it in execution. On one of her excursions to the city, she had been waited upon by her old acquaintance, Captain Grant, of the

42d regiment. From him she found that Colonel Stirling, and most of the old officers of the regiment, were there; but, upon Grant's being unable to deny that he, and, consequently, the rest of them, knew she had a son a prisoner, she at once testified, by the coldness of her manner, that she had expected something better from them than a total neglect of me. Unacquainted with the human heart, under the baneful influence of party fury, and making no allowance for the repulsive nature of misfortune, especially when coupled with imputed guilt, she had made calculations little warranted by the practice of the world, more particularly of that part of it which is flushed with prosperity.

On account of some meditated operation of the army, no one at this time was permitted to pass the lines; and, so far from getting me home with her, she was not without anxiety respecting her own return, which had been already longer protracted than she had counted upon. This interdiction of intercourse continued for several weeks; but as soon as it was removed, and it became probable that General Howe's attention was less engrossed by great concerns, she determined to give the advice of Mr Elliot a trial. Accordingly, one morning she went to New York, and without acquainting me with her design, which she knew I would oppose, boldly waited upon Sir William Howe; and, asking to speak with him, was shown into a parlour, where, taking a seat, and meditating upon the manner of addressing him when he should appear, he came into the room, and had got pretty near her before she perceived him. Rising, she said, Sir William Howe, I presume! He answered by a bow. She then made known her business, doubtless, in her best style of elocution; and concluded by expressing the

greatness of her obligation for his Excellency's permission for me to go home with her on parole; and then immediately to take up arms against us again, I suppose! said the General. By no means, Sir; I solicit his release upon parole; that will restrain him until exchanged: but, on my own part, I will go farther, and say, that if I have any influence over him, he shall never take up arms again. Here the feelings of the patriot were wholly lost in those of the "war-detesting" mother. The General seemed to hesitate, but gave no answer. On the renewal of her suit, however, he appeared, by his manner, (for he was sparing of words,) to assent, and so she construed it. But, to put the matter out of doubt, she asked—Have I your Excellency's permission for my son to go home with me on his parole? Bowing, he answered, Yes. May Colonel Miles and Major West, added she, be permitted to go also? Now, Madam, observed the General, you are making two requests instead of one. She begged his pardon for presuming to do so, as she ought certainly to be satisfied with the great favour already granted; and inquired, if she was to mention the matter to Mr Loring. He said it was unnecessary, as the proper measures would be taken to effect the purpose. The reason of her mentioning Colonel Miles and Major West was, that they had already obtained a promise of being liberated on parole; and she was apprehensive, that, unless they were put upon the same footing with me, I should suspect improper terms had been made, and mar the whole business. This caution, probably, was unnecessary; the boon was extended to these gentlemen, as I presume it would have been, had they not been mentioned. From the General's quarters she immediately went to Mr Loring, whom she had known

in Philadelphia, where he had some time resided, and acquainted him with the indulgence which had been granted her; upon which he was pleased to observe, that it was more than I was entitled to, as not one of the prisoners had been more upon his high horse.

Whatever grounds there may be for ascribing cruelty to General Howe, it must be admitted, that no obduracy appeared at this interview; and I have been careful to give it precisely as it was related by my mother. War, indeed, in its essence, is cruelty, especially civil war: its tendency is to make men ferocious and merciless. In conflicts, in which our lives are continually at stake, we, at length, become callous, even to the loss of our own party, and have, of course, still less concern for the destruction of our adversaries, notwithstanding that particular situations may sometimes call forth striking examples of sympathy and generosity. When, moreover, we consider the foe as obnoxious to legal punishment, our hearts are too apt to be steeled against all "compunctious visitings of nature." Such seems to be the nature of man; and the apathy of Howe, to the miseries of his prisoners, serves to show that he was too like the bulk of his species, ever prone to severity against the opposers of established authority, when partaking of, or friendly to it. What was the conduct of the Duke of Alva in the Low Countries? That of the British, which we, as liege subjects, did not then disapprove, against the rebels in the year forty-six, commemorated by Smollet in his "Mourn, hapless Caledonia, mourn?" What were the hideous enormities of the French republicans against the people of *La Vendee*, and what mercy was evinced towards Burr by the high-toned advocates of prerogative under the mild sway of Mr Jefferson?

Though the abuse of power is always detestable, yet it may not be improper to look at home before we devote others to destruction as monsters of unheard of cruelty. I neither have palliated, nor do I mean to palliate, the sufferings of the prisoners at New York: they were shocking to humanity, and no one witnessed them with more anguish than myself; but this is no reason that we should not ask ourselves, whether it was to be expected, that they were, at once, to be set at liberty, and, if not, what other mode or place of confinement was within the power of the enemy? Or, if the want of good and sufficient food and other accommodations was the cause of the mortality, are we perfectly sure they had better to administer? If, in an entirely new state of the world, we are, on account of former injuries, to reject the aid of the only nation upon earth which has power to rescue us from impending perdition, it certainly behoves us to inquire calmly into the extent of her aggressions, and, for our own sakes, if not for her's or the sake of justice, to admit the effect of any alleviating circumstances which may be found. But few of us, I trust, are in the happy predicament to have been so hysterically alarmed during the war as to be unable to forgive; or to have incurred disgraces which can only be washed out and avenged by the common destruction of our old enemy and ourselves.

CHAPTER XI.

The Author leaves Long Island for New York and Elizabethtown—Arrives at Philadelphia—Meets the Object of an Early Attachment—Public Feelings.

It was not long before the welcome summons arrived for our repairing to New York for the purpose of being transported from thence, in a flag vessel, to Elizabethtown; and, upon this occasion, we were escorted, to the end of the village, by a no small troop of our less lucky fellow prisoners. It was made a condition, by Loring, that our boarding should be paid before we left Flatbush; and the heart of old Jacob was accordingly gladdened, by the sight of a sum of money he had despaired of receiving. He and I parted very good friends; and it is but justice to say, that the treatment I received from him, and his family, Mr and Mrs Hagerman, was both civil and obliging. As there was no subject upon which we prisoners had been so much in the dark, and were, at the same time, so anxious to be informed of, as that of the state of our army and public affairs in general, Tudor, on my coming away, furnished me with a kind of cypher, by which, as soon as I had time to inform myself, I was to satisfy him by letter on certain points he particularly wished to know. The disguise was not in the character, but in the substitution of one piece of information for another,—for instance, a lady,

who was to be named, was to signify the army, and, if that was strong and in a prosperous train, it was to be indicated by announcing the health and charming looks of the lady. There was a scale in the key by which the intelligence might be graduated; and it was so contrived, as to admit of the transmission of pretty satisfactory information in a few important particulars. Knowing the deep interest that was taken in the expected communication, it was among my first cares, on getting home, to perform this duty. But I must admit, that my statements, though correct in the main, were rather more flattering than rigid truth would warrant. I could not endure the thought of reducing my companions in misfortune to despair. It was certainly admissible, on this occasion, to adopt the practice of painters; and, in preserving the lineaments and character of the countenance, to render the portrait as pleasing as possible. It had the effect, as I afterwards learned, to put them in good heart: for, although I had not said every thing which might have been wished, it was ascribed to a propensity I was supposed to have, of looking rather on the unfavourable side of things; and, as I, so little sanguine, had ventured to say so much, it was inferred, that I might, with truth, have said a great deal more.

The particulars of this pleasing trip to New York have entirely escaped my memory; as how we travelled, though I presume it was in a waggon for the convenience of carrying our baggage; whether it was in the forenoon or afternoon; whether we left the city on the day we reached it, &c. though, as to this, it is more than probable that it was not until the day after, as I well recollect breakfasting with my mother at the house of Mr Matthews, the mayor, and that his daughter, who

entertained us, was so much to my taste, that, for the moment, I quite forgot the politics of her father, and might even have swerved, perhaps, from my loyalty to an allegiance, a thousand times sworn elsewhere. But it must not be imagined, from the circumstance of this breakfast, that I had apostatized from my principles. I have, fortunately, an excuse for accepting civilities from the offspring of an inveterate, and reputedly persecuting Tory, which, I am not without hope, will obtain my pardon from the most determined and least compounding republican of the present hour. A Miss Seymour, a cousin of Miss Matthews, had long been desirous of getting to Philadelphia to see her father, who lay sick there; and as it was known to Mr Matthews that my mother was soon to go thither, he had made himself acquainted with her, and recommended his niece to her protection in the meditated journey. This it was that procured me the honour of breakfasting with Miss Matthews, with whom her cousin stayed. But who, pray, was this sick Mr Seymour? methinks I hear some high-toned fastidious *seventy-six* man exclaim. He was, you may rest assured, Sir, no "anti-revolutionary adherent of the enemy." He was no less a personage than Commodore Seymour, who at this time had the command of the Delaware gunboats.—Yes, commodore of the gunboats! Another peccadillo, if haply they may be so called, of a similar complexion, I must confess myself guilty of; though, from an exuberance of good fortune not always attending my imputed apostacies, I have, if I would avail myself of it, an equally good come-off here. To make a *profert*, then, of my offence, with its ablution along with it, I undertook to bring out, and actually did bring out with me, at the request of Mr Tench Coxe, now in the

full tide of republican orthodoxy, a letter to a lady in Philadelphia, to be delivered by my own hand to another lady in that city; which commission I faithfully executed. I cheerfully did that for him, which shortly before would have been the greatest favour to myself:

Haud ignarus mali, miseris succurrere disco.

Having alluded to this gentleman before, and in a manner that may not be pleasing to him, although I have said nothing which does not arise from facts, of which he will not deny the correctness, I here sincerely avow, that I am much more disposed to do him a good than evil office. Notwithstanding the contrasted vicissitudes of our fortune, and that the great eras of his political ascension have been those of my depression, I have not forgotten our boyish days, of which he, not long since, put me in mind; my early acquaintance in his family; the pleasant hours I have passed with himself and his brother, (nearer my own age,) as well at his father's house in town, as at his seat on the Schuylkill; and that his mother was always spoken of by mine as the nearest friend of her youth. Such recollections are far more grateful to the heart than the bitter collisions of interested manhood, or the "fury passions" of political dissension.

But not to linger in New York at a moment so precious, I have to state, that, after the signing of a new parole by Miles, West, and myself, at the office of Mr Loring, our little party, with the addition of Miss Seymour, embarked in a small sloop for Elizabethtown-point, then held by us. The officer commanding on this occasion was a son of Dr Achmuty, among the most distinguished in New York for his zeal in the royal cause. The behaviour of this gentleman was perfectly agreeable to us;

and we parted on the most civil terms. It is not impossible, though such rapid promotions are hardly to be looked for in the British army, that he may be the General Achmuty, who not long since acquitted himself so well at Buenos Ayres; as he was stated in the newspapers to be a son of the Doctor. The weather being fine, but with very little wind, our passage was a pleasant one; and in the course of the day, we had once more the happiness of treading our own ground. I should in vain endeavour to describe my feelings on this occasion; for although they were chastised by the recollection, that my present liberty was held on sufferance, they were yet light, joyous, and tumultuary. I had been about eight months captive; and it was more than a year since I had seen Philadelphia. It must now have been, from my best data for ascertaining it, about the middle of July. Our army lay at Morristown; and after casting about for the means of being conveyed thither, we at length found them in a coal-waggon, little inferior to a coach and six, in a journey which too much crowded the mind with pleasing ideas, to admit of much concern about the choice of a vehicle. When within a few miles of our destination, we met the general on horseback, with three or four attendants. He recognized us, and stopping a few minutes, congratulated my mother on the success of her errand; and at going on informed us that he should return to camp in a few hours, where he expected to see us. By his appointment, on his return, Colonel Miles, Major West, and myself, waited upon him at his marquee in the evening. In the course of conversation, he asked what we conceived to be the objects of General Howe, provided the question did not, in our opinion, interfere with our parole. Colonel Miles tak-

ing the word, replied, that, in his opinion, he meditated a co-operation with the northern army by means of the Hudson. The general heard him out, and then observed, that indications and probabilities both tended to that conclusion; but that, nevertheless, he had little doubt that his object was Philadelphia. I mention this, as it is stated by Mr Marshall, that he was a good deal embarrassed on this occasion, and rather inclined to believe, that the movements of General Howe would be up the Hudson. Whatever might have happened afterwards to alter or unsettle his opinion, it was certainly at this time, as I have mentioned; and he spoke as if his conviction was strong. He had unquestionably good intelligence; and a person who had communicated with him, had not long before been executed as a spy at Brunswick. This man, who generally resided at New York, under the disguise of a zealous royalist, had been indiscreet enough to unbosom himself very fully to Major Williams, who, in the spring of this year, on the prospect of an exchange, which, however, proved abortive, had been summoned to that city. He gave him much information as to what was passing there; and among other things which regarded us, told him that interest had been made for my going out on parole, but I was considered not sufficiently *well disposed* (the fashionable phrase for yielding Whiggism) to be entitled to the indulgence. It was but a few weeks after this interview with Williams, that, in attempting to induce two British soldiers to desert to our army with intelligence, he was detected and suffered.

The day of our arrival, and the succeeding one, we spent at Morristown; and here, for the first time, I had the pleasure of knowing Colonel Hamilton. He presided at the general's table, where we dined; and in a large compa-

ny, in which there were several ladies, among whom I recollect one or two of the Miss Livingstons and a Miss Brown, he acquitted himself with an ease, propriety, and vivacity, which gave me the most favourable impression of his talents and accomplishments—talents, it is true, which did not indicate the solid abilities his subsequent career has unfolded, but which announced a brilliancy which might adorn the most polished circles of society, and have fitted him for the part of an Algarotti at the court of a Frederick.

> Vous, que les graces et les ris
> Formerent pour flatter et plaire,

to borrow the words of the king, in an address to this favourite: Or, in reference to his latter conduct and matured capacity, where shall we find one to whom the language of Tibullus to Messala would better apply!

> Nam quis te majora gerit castrisve, forove?
>
> Who the state's thunder better form'd to wield,
> And shake alike the senate and the field!

With Colonel Tilghman, another of the general's aids, I was well acquainted, as he was a Philadelphian, and had been a lieutenant of the light infantry company of Greens, already mentioned. By him and Colonel Hamilton I was taken in the evening to drink tea with some of the ladies of the village, where were also those with whom we had dined.

I had been extremely anxious to see our army. Here it was, but I could see nothing which deserved the name. I was told, indeed, that it was much weakened by detachments; and I was glad to find there was some cause for the present paucity of soldiers. I could not doubt, however, that things were going well. The commander-

in-chief and all about him were in excellent spirits; and as to General Wayne, whom I waited upon at his quarters, he entertained the most sovereign contempt for the enemy. In his confident way, he affirmed that the two armies had interchanged their original modes of warfare. That for our parts we had thrown away the shovel, and the British had taken it up, as they dared not face us without the cover of an intrenchment. I made some allowance for the fervid manner of the general, who, though unquestionably as brave a man as any in the army, was, nevertheless, somewhat addicted to the vaunting style of Marshal Villars, a man who, like himself, could fight as well as brag. By the by, I do not know whether this talent might not have been of use in our army: it certainly is, or at least is considered to be so in a French one, since, of all the gasconaders in the world, the Gallic commanders must confessedly take the *pas*. It had been humorously stated in the English prints, that upon a gentleman, who had been in America and seen our troops, being asked what was their uniform, he replied, In general it is blue and buff, but by this time it must be all buff! The period for this unity of colour, however, had not yet arrived; though, from the motley shabby covering of the men, it was to be inferred that it was rapidly approaching. Even in General Wayne himself there was, in this particular, a considerable falling off. His quondam regimental, as colonel of the 4th battalion, was, I think, blue and white, in which he had been accustomed to appear with exemplary neatness; whereas he was now dressed in character for Macheath, or Captain Gibbet, in a dingy red coat, with a black rusty cravat, and tarnished laced hat. In short, from all I could see, I was by no means warranted

in supposing that our affairs were in a very prosperous train, notwithstanding the cheerful appearance at head-quarters: but I endeavoured to suspend my opinion until I should have longer and better means of forming a conclusion.

We hired a waggon at this place to carry us to Mr Vanhorne's at Boundbrook, where my mother expected to find her horse and chair, agreeably to the arrangement made with Major Pauli. This was a subject of much raillery on the road, particularly with Colonel Miles, who could not persuade himself that a Hessian could forego so fine a chance of plunder; and he took it for granted, that the major had not only appropriated the equipage to himself, but sold it long since, and put the proceeds in his pocket. But, on the contrary, in the strutting phraseology of Burgoyne, he had been "Conscious of the honour of soldiership," and with good faith performed what he had promised. We had, in fact, met the poor beast in question, on the road to Morristown, but *quantum mutatus ab illo!* how changed from the sleek, well-fed animal, that had, about six weeks before, entered the town of Brunswick! A constant padding of the hoof for this space of time, first on the royal, and then on the rebel side, with such casual supplies of forage as campaigning affords, had reduced him to the continental standard; and although it had been suggested to my mother as he passed with the chair, that they might be hers, she was unable to recognize either; the chair she could not claim, and as to the horse, she was sure he was not hers.

Whether there were any arrangements with Mr Vanhorne, I do not know; but his hospitality ought certainly to have been recompensed by an unlimited credit on

the public stores. His house, used as an hotel, seemed constantly full. It was at this time occupied by Colonel Bland of the Virginia cavalry, and the officers of his corps, to whom we were introduced, and among others, if my memory does not mislead me, to Captain Lee, afterwards so distinguished as a partisan, and now known as General Harry Lee. Notwithstanding the number of guests that were to be provided for, there appeared no deficiency in accommodation; and we supped and lodged well. As the horse and chair were not expected back for a day or two, Major West, who was in no hurry, undertook to wait for it, and bring it on to Philadelphia; while the rest of us, who had objects more or less attracting in view, pursued our way the next morning. No other incident on the road occurred, interesting enough to have left any trace in my memory, except the meeting with Mr and Mrs Coxe, at Neshaminy Ferry. Matters had been arranged for this interview with my mother on her way to New York; and they now met her in consequence of a notice from her, that she would be there at an appointed time. Their object was, to learn what she might know of their son, as well as son-in-law, Mr Andrew Allen. They were deeply affected at the dispersed situation of their family, and feelingly alive to the unhappy effects of civil dissension. The old gentleman, I recollect, blamed the step which had been taken by Mr Allen and his son; alleging, that they had been precipitated into it by Christian Huck, who had assured them, that measures were in agitation for their immediate arrest and confinement.

We reached Philadelphia in the evening, where, it will be enough for me to say, that my fondest anticipations were realized, in a meeting with the object which

had caused the deepest sighs of my captivity. Were I dealing in fiction, or speaking of another, a more particular representation might be required, of so auspicious a winding up, of a more than twelvemonths absence, incessantly galled by sickly hope and feverish uncertainty. But, in situations of tender interest, the fastidious delicacy, or, as the French might call it, the *mauvaise honte* of English manners, forbids a man to place himself. It is observable, that this highest seasoning of French memoir writing is wholly omitted by Mr Cumberland, who must have known the nation's taste. He gives us to understand, indeed, that he was married; and more than once marshals his children before us; but he never ventures to disclose a single circumstance of his love, or to descant upon what ought to be considered as the *sine qua non* of his two conditions of a husband and a father. Mr Gibbon, it is true, touches upon his attachment to Mademoiselle Curchod, afterwards Madame Necker; but evidently with a mortal fear of being laughed at, for only glancing at his "early love." Perhaps nothing is more characteristic of the manners of the two nations than this very circumstance, which serves also, among others, to justify Sterne, in his singular declaration, that the French are too serious. An amour in their hands, be it their own or another's, is always an extremely grave affair; and thence derives an interest, which an English writer, in his own case, would be sure to spoil, by a levity assumed from the apprehension of ridicule. But, to whatever cause this diversity of sentiment may be owing, it shows the superior decorum of English literature, as formed in the school of Addison, Steele, Johnson, &c. to that of the French, under the guidance of Voltaire, Rousseau, Raynal, &c.; the one, by its circumspection,

cherishing religion, morals, and government; the other, by its licentiousness, undermining them all.

Having now brought myself back to Philadelphia, from whence I marched the preceding summer, it naturally puts an end to the narrative of my campaign and captivity; as, though yet a prisoner, I was at home. What I have further to say, therefore, will have less the air of adventures; and I shall, consequently, be relieved, I hope, from so minute an attention to my own concerns.

One of the first things which struck us, on getting within our own territory, was the high price of wine and other liquors. We attributed this to their growing scarcity, though equally owing, probably, to the incipient depreciation of the paper currency, of which we had then no idea. We saw, to our great surprise, no military parade upon our journey, nor any indication of martial vigour on the part of the country. General Washington, with the little remnant of his army at Morristown, seemed left to scuffle for liberty, like another Cato at Utica. Here and there we saw a militia man with his contrasted coloured cape and facings; and we found, besides, that captains, majors, and colonels, had become "dog-cheap" in the land. But, unfortunately, these war-functionaries were not found at the head of their men. They, more generally, figured as bar-keepers, condescendingly serving out small measures of liquor to their less dignified customers. Still were they brimful of patriotism, the prevailing feature of which was, to be no less ardent in their pursuit, than fervent in their hatred of Tories.*

---

* The generous exertions of the Philadelphia troop of cavalry, and other portions of the militia, in the preceding winter, are honourable exceptions to the general supineness.

During a stay of a few days in Philadelphia, my mother and myself, I recollect, dined at President Hancock's. He had been one of the opposers of her scheme of going into New York; but was sufficiently a man of the world to put on an appearance of being pleased with its success. Yet, as he was among the most conspicuous on the American side, and deeply staked in the issue of the contest, it is not uncharitable to suppose that he was not very cordially gratified by an event which might give to the adverse cause any colour of clemency. But I have no right to attribute his advice upon the occasion to other than the most friendly motives; since mine, had I been consulted, would have been the same.

My mother, as already mentioned, having removed her residence to Reading, thither, in company with the lady so often adverted to, whose family was also established there, we proceeded in high spirits. Many other Philadelphians had recourse to this town, as a place of safety from a sudden incursion of the enemy; and, among a score or more of fugitive families, were those of General Mifflin and my uncle, as I have called Mr Biddle, though only standing in that relation by marriage. It was also the station assigned to a number of prisoners, both British and German, as well as of the principal Scotch royalists that had been subdued and taken in North Carolina. I soon discovered that a material change had taken place during my absence from Pennsylvania; and that the pulses of many that, at the time of my leaving it, had beaten high in the cause of Whiggism and liberty, were considerably lowered. Power, to use a language which had already ceased to be orthodox, and could therefore only be whispered, had fallen into low hands. The better sort were disgusted and weary of

the war. Congress, indeed, had given out that they had counted the cost of the contest; but it was but too apparent that very many of their adherents had made false calculations on the subject, having neither allowed enough for disasters in the field, nor domestic chagrins, the inevitable consequence of a dissolution of old power and the assumption of new. It was, in fact, just beginning to be perceived, that the ardour of the inflamed multitude is not to be tempered; and that the instigators of revolutions are rarely those who are destined to conclude them, or profit by them. The great cause of schism among the Whigs had been the declaration of independence. Its adoption had, of course, rendered numbers malcontent; and thence, by a very natural transition, consigned them to the Tory ranks. Unfortunately for me, this was the predicament in which I found my nearest and best friend, whose example had, no doubt, contributed to the formation of my political opinions, and whose advice, concurring with my own sense of duty, had placed me in the army. I now discovered, that we no longer thought or felt alike; and though no rupture took place, some coldness ensued; and I have to regret a few words of asperity which passed between us, on occasion of the French alliance. But this was but a momentary blast; as neither of us was infected with that hateful bigotry which, too generally, actuated Whigs and Tories, and led to mutual persecution, as one or other had the ascendancy. As to the Whigs, the very cause for which they contended was essentially that of freedom; and yet all the freedom it granted was, at the peril of tar and feathers, to think and act like themselves; the extent, indeed, of all toleration proceeding from the multitude, whether advocating the divine right of a king—the di-

vine sovereignty of the people—or of the idol it may be pleased to constitute its unerring plenipotentiary. Toleration is only to be looked for upon points in which men are indifferent; or where they are duly checked and restrained by a salutary authority.

Mr Edward Biddle, then in a declining state of health, and no longer in Congress, apparently entertained sentiments not accordant with the measures pursuing; and, in the fervid style of elocution for which he was distinguished, he often exclaimed that he really knew not what to wish for. "The subjugation of my country," he would say, "I deprecate as a most grievous calamity, and yet sicken at the idea of thirteen unconnected petty democracies; if we are to be independent, let us, in the name of God, at once have an empire, and place Washington at the head of it." * Fortunately for our existence as a nation, a great proportion of those, whose early exertions tended to that issue, were not aware of the price by which it was to be acquired; otherwise, my knowledge of the general feeling at this time, so far as my means of information extended, obliges me to say that it would not have been achieved. Not that disgust and despondence were universal among the leading and best informed Whigs, but an equal proportion of disaffection to independence, in the early part of the year 1776, must have defeated the enterprise. Still, it may be observed, that, as Whiggism declined among the higher

* I have presumed to put in the wrong those who were adverse to the declaration of independence; and the high ground on which we have since stood fully justified me; but present appearances seem again to unsettle the question in the minds of those, at least, who are heterodox enough to doubt the eligibility of a dependence on France.

in the home department, he was one of those whose memory treasures up small things with even more care than great ones. He was said to be a very diligent reader, and was certainly a never weary monotonous talker, who, in the discourses he held, seldom failed to give evidence of an acquaintance with the most minute, recondite, and out of the way facts; insomuch that a bet was once offered that he could name the town-crier of Bergen-op-Zoom. As Ireland had given him birth, he was probably like the bulk of his emigrating countrymen, in the antipodes at all points, to whatever was English, and a staunch patriot, of course. It was, moreover, his passion, or his policy, to identify himself with the *people*, in opposition to those who were termed the *well born*, a designation conceived in the genuine spirit of democracy, and which, as it may be supposed, did "yeoman's service" to her cause, now dispensing with its use from a just deference to its well born advocates from Virginia and her dependencies. In other respects Mr Bryan was well enough: Let us say, a well meaning man, and even one who, in the main, felt he was acting the patriot: For this part, it is well known, is played in very different styles. Should any reader require a proof of this, I might refer him to the modes of Washington and Jefferson. Some only see danger, bless their optics! on the side of aristocracy: and, therefore, rivet themselves with all their might in an anti-patrician spirit of perverseness to every thing candid, or noble, or honourable. Nothing is republican with them, but as it is crawling and mean, and candied over with a fulsome and hypocritical love for the people. I do not say that Mr Bryan was actuated by such motives, but merely that his patriotism was of the humble character they are calculated to inspire.

Of his colleague, Mr Canon, it may not be uncharitable to presume, that, having the little knowledge of man, and scholastic predilection for the antique in liberty, which generally falls to the lot of a pedagogue, he acted accordingly. * But death quickly snatched him away, *ostendent terris hunc tantum fata.* These constituted the duumvirate which had the credit of framing the constitution, and thence laying, in Pennsylvania, the cornerstone of that edifice, which, however retarded in its progress by aristocratical interferences, towers, like another Babel, to the skies, and will continue to tower until finally arrested and dilapidated by an irremediable confusion of tongues: for anarchy ever closes the career of democracy.

* As to myself, who always find it impossible to separate from my idea of a good government, somewhat of ignoble fireside comfort and tranquillity, I must say that I have but a poor opinion of old Roman felicity, notwithstanding the immense *amor patriæ* that attended it.

CHAPTER XII.

Philadelphia Threatened—General Washington marches to meet the Enemy—Battle at Brandywine—British take Possession of Philadelphia—Subsequent Operations—Character of the Republican Chiefs—Society at Reading—Temper of the Times—The Author Married.

General Howe had remained inactive during the summer, and it was not until the latter part of August that it became manifest that Philadelphia was his object. This rendered it expedient, in the opinion of the active Whigs of that city, to put out of the way of mischief the most influential and zealous of the disaffected; several of whom were, accordingly, on authority of Congress, apprehended and deported to the western parts of Virginia. On their way thither, they passed through Reading; and it being proposed, by some of their old fellow-citizens there resident, to show them some attention in their misfortune, the proposition was generally approved, and I was among the number of those who called on them at the inn at which they stopped. Here we found some of the principal and most respectable Quakers, Mr James Pemberton, Myers Fisher, and several others, whom I do not, with certainty, recollect. Mr Fisher was the only one of this society with whom I was personally acquainted; and he, I remember, took occasion significantly to observe, that "I did not look as if I had been

starved by those sad people the British." But I found among them another acquaintance of an wholly different order. This was no other than my old friend Pike, the fencing-master, who, although he had dissembled so well at the outset of the business, as to render it dubious whether he was for or against us, had, in the sequel, it seems, evinced himself a true-hearted Briton, to which circumstance he owed the honour of his being in his present *very good company*, as he termed it. The red coat and laced hat of Pike were, to be sure, very strikingly in contrast with the flat brims and plain drab-coloured garments of the rest of the assemblage: nevertheless, from an internal similarity, this seemingly discordant ingredient incorporated perfectly well with the mass; and Friend Pike, as he was called, officiating in the capacity of a major domo or caterer at the inns they put up at, was a person, I found, of no small consideration with his party. The prisoners were not much dejected, probably looking upon themselves as martyrs to the cause of their country; and, in fact, though apparently well pleased with the civility we showed them, their manner rather indicated, that they considered us as more objects of pity than themselves. How much is it to be lamented, that the public good should not always be so manifest as not to be mistaken! If this were the case, how many of the *fantastic tricks* we play off against each other, in its name, might be spared! But then, we should no longer be the self-important "forked animals," "the quintessence of dust," called man.

Having drawn together his forces, General Washington marched to meet the enemy, who, from the head of Elk, was directing his course to Philadelphia. As it had been given out, by the disaffected, that we were

much weaker than, in truth, we were, the General thought it best to show both Whigs and Tories the real strength he possessed; and, in this view, took his route through the city, the *bellorum maxima merces*, or, at least, the great object of the campaign, and the point, which, if gained, would, in the opinion of Mr Galloway, be decisive of the contest. I happened to be there at the time, and, from the coffehouse corner, saw our army, with the commander-in-chief at its head, pass down Front Street. The sight was highly interesting to persons of all descriptions; and, among the many who, perhaps, equally disclaimed the epithet of Whig or of Tory, Mr Chew, from an upper window in the house of Mr Turner, appeared a very anxious spectator. By the bye, it might savour of bigotry to impute guilt to this want of decision. In civil commotions, there is generally so much to disapprove, on both sides, and the issue is so little answerable to the designs of the well-meaning men embarked in them, that neutrality, if it could be maintained, might often be the most eligible part. Atticus was, perhaps, as good, and, probably, a wiser man than either Cicero, or Pompey, or Cæsar. There are certainly times in which inaction becomes virtue, notwithstanding that active ardour may be more congenial to upright intention; and that it is in the glowing temperament of a Cato, disdaining that "his house should stand secure and flourish in a civil war," that the noblest feelings of an honest heart are to be looked for. And yet, this very Cato, under the guidance of the same poet who puts this heroic sentiment into his mouth, is made to counsel his son to "live retired, and to content himself with being obscurely good."

The impression made by this review of the American

army, it is to be presumed, was rather favourable than otherwise, from the propensity of persons unaccustomed to the sight of large bodies of men to augment them. But it was very disproportioned to the zeal for liberty, which had been manifested the year before. It amounted to but about eight or nine thousand men, according to Mr Marshall; but these, though indifferently dressed, held well burnished arms, and carried them like soldiers, and looked, in short, as if they might have faced an equal number with a reasonable prospect of success.

The action which ensued at Brandywine, on the eleventh of September, is an instance, among many others furnished by history, both of the temptation to dispute the passage of a river by fronting the enemy on the opposite side, and of the inefficacy of such attempts. The difficulty and ineligibility of these undertakings are noticed by most of the writers on the art of war, and particularly by the Marquis De Feuqueres. To a person of any military experience, who reflects how easy it must be to distract the opposing army by fallacious demonstrations, in a situation at once concealed from observation, and exempted from the peril which results from movements in the face of an adversary, in a state to profit by them, the little chance of succeeding in the effort, on a merely defensive plan, must be apparent. Where, indeed, the defending general shall permit himself to become the assailant, if occasion should offer, he, in some degree, balances advantages; and the conception of General Washington, as mentioned by Mr Marshall, of crossing at the lower ford to attack the enemy's right under Knyphausen, was masterly; and might, if rapidly put in execution, have handsomely turned the tables. It can hardly be doubted, however, that a position on

the enemy's flank to the westward, would have been more eligible than that taken in front; and that the means of annoying and possibly crippling him on his march, which was all that could reasonably be looked for from an army so inferior as ours, might have offered at this river or at Schuylkill. This was, probably, at one time contemplated, under the recommendation, as it was said, of General Greene. But the public clamour demanded that a battle should be risked for the city; and I well remember, that it was given out at Reading, on the suggestion of General Mifflin, that Greene, of whom he was no friend, was jealous of southern influence, and therefore indifferent to the fate of Philadelphia. But if Greene really advised the measure attributed to him, thereby securing the open country to our army in case of disaster, in preference to the plan adopted, and which, in addition to its other faults, tended to place us in the nook formed by the course of the Delaware, I cannot but say, that, whatever were his motives, and we have no ground to presume them bad, he was right. Yet, if Congress required that the enemy should be fought, and we have good authority that they did require it, the opportunity of bringing him to action, in any other mode than that of placing ourselves directly in his way, might have been lost.

But why so much caution, it may be asked, against a foe in the very heart of the country? Why not rather turn out *en masse*, surround, and make a breakfast of Mr Howe and his mercenaries? Could not a population of two millions of souls have furnished fighting Whigs enough for the purpose? Where were the multitudes which used to appear in arms, in the commons of Philadelphia? Where the legions of New England men that

hemmed in Gage at Boston? Where, in short, the hundred and fifty thousand men in arms throughout the continent, spoken of by General Lee * and others, at the beginning of the contest? Where were the Pennsylvania riflemen, those formidable, unerring marksmen, each of whom could venture to put a ball in a target, held by his brother? How came it, that that excellent jest of a British dragoon pursuing one of them round a tree, was not exemplified on this occasion? These things promised well; they were flattering in the extreme, and admirably calculated to buoy us up in a confidence of the martial superiority of freemen to slaves. Yet, on the day of trial, from whatever cause it proceeded, the fate of the country and its liberties was always committed to a handful of mercenaries, the very things which were the eternal theme of our scorn and derision. The fact must either be, that the effective strength of a nation does, after all, reside in regular disciplined forces, or that appearances were lamentably deceitful; that all the patriotic ardour we had at first displayed had already evaporated; and that the gallant affair of Bunker's Hill and others were but the effects of momentary excitement. America does not seem to be a soil for enthusiasm; and I am not at all disposed to dispute the assertion contained in a letter of General Du Portail, in the time of the war, that there was more of it in a single coffeehouse in Paris than on our whole continent put together. From these facts, and facts they assuredly are, let our theoretical men calculate the probable result of a formidable in-

* "Not less than an hundred and fifty thousand gentlemen, yeomen and farmers, are in arms, determined to preserve their liberties or perish."—*Letter from General Lee to General Burgoyne.*

vasion of our country in our present state of preparation; and if, in the heroic epoch alluded to, when there had been really a promise of great things, so little was done, how much less is rationally to be expected from the empty vapouring of demagogue valour. Would it have been credited in the year 1775, that a British army of eighteen thousand men could have marched in perfect security from the Chesapeake to Philadelphia? that a much smaller force could have penetrated through the Jerseys to the Delaware? and that mere partizan-bodies could have traversed the southern states in utter contempt of the *long knife* of Virginia? All these things were done; and yet our babbling statesmen will talk, "Ye gods! how they will talk," of the irresistible prowess of a nation of freemen! From the perseverance of Spain, when compared with the short-lived exertions of Austria and Prussia, some argue the superiority of a determined people to regular armies. But it is not certainly like Spain that we would wish to have our country defended to be first overrun and destroyed! Neither can the glory we aspire to be merely that of the boxer, who bears a great deal of beating, and solely depends on outwinding his adversary. I have lately seen sneers at what are called *technical* armies; but what are we to call those with which Napoleon has achieved his victories and attained his present fearful ascendancy? We can hardly say they are not *technical*, because in part composed of conscripts; and if by the term is meant *disciplined*, who will deny them that qualification?

Previously to Sir William Howe's getting possession of Philadelphia measures were taken by General Washington to give him battle a second time. The two armies were on the point of engaging, and the encounter was only

prevented by a heavy fall of rain. The weather continued wet for a day or two; and, by damaging our ammunition, rendered it inexpedient to seek the enemy. While our army had been preparing for action, I have been informed by several discerning officers, that the general discovered unusual impetuosity; and that, as he rode along the line, exhorting his men to do their duty, his manner evinced an extreme impatience of ill fortune, and a determination to retrieve it or perish in the attempt.

Although defeat had been the consequence of his unequal conflicts with the foe, and his country seemed lost to the generous ardour which had once inspired it, his manly mind was not subdued. Of this he gave an illustrious instance in his assault of the post at Germantown. That the British army was not destroyed on this occasion, and Philadelphia recovered, has been represented by certain malcontents as a shameful dereliction of a victory already gained; and General Lee, sneeringly, denominates it a stroke of the *bathos*. But what would he that we should have done? He would hardly have had us press on hap-hazard, without redressing the disorder which had taken place in our line; a disorder which might have ensued had even General Lee himself commanded. Besides, the step would have been by no means congenial with his own conduct at Monmouth; which was sufficiently circumspect and respectful of an enemy he here seems to consider as nothing.* But the reputation of a

* A partial advantage over the enemy was probably all that was contemplated on this occasion, and it was certainly as much as we had a right to calculate upon with our very inferior army. This may account for the delay at Chew's house, which has been so much censured by those who have rashly asserted that a complete victory was in our power.

commander ought not to depend upon a sarcasm; and, in order to have shown wherein General Washington's conduct had been defective, Mr Lee should have fairly set before us what *Duke* Ferdinand, whom he is pleased to bring into contrast, would have done. Possibly the duke might have duly respected the British grenadiers, and made comparisons, not altogether animating, between the respective numbers, equipments, and discipline of his own army and that of his adversary. But this, as a prudent general, he would, doubtless, have kept to himself; since, to proclaim the bravery of an enemy to our own men, on the field of action, is, at best, but a doubtful mode of encouraging them. It would, however, be no just disparagement of General Washington to admit his inferiority to Prince Ferdinand, in matters wherein the desultory Indian warfare had furnished no experience. We had no right to count upon him as consummate in the science of tactics, or to hold him fully competent to the nice arrangements required in the movements of an army, should it even be disciplined. Indeed, it was observable, and confirmed by every instance which came under my notice, that little benefit, with respect to the discipline of parade, so essential to the effect of operations on the large scale, was derived from any of the gentlemen who had been in the provincial service. The fortitude which is acquired from a familiarity with the perils and privations of war was conspicuous in many; but being too far advanced in life readily to acquire new habits, they were far from excelling in the business of manœuvring, or in an aptitude of imparting to their men the air and adroitness of regular soldiers. In the situation of our army, necessarily deficient in discipline, something of that attention to minu-

tire; that acquaintance with the duties of the adjutant and drill-serjeant, with the occasional exercise of them, which have been ascribed to the King of Prussia; that searching eye which runs along the line, detecting, at a glance, the remissness of every lounger, might have been desirable in its commander, possessing, in other respects, exterior qualifications for the station in a degree not to be surpassed: a manner which at once inspired confidence and attachment; a figure pre-eminently gentlemanly, dignified, commanding, equally removed from heaviness and flippancy, and blending the gravity of the sage with the animation of the soldier. Had it belonged to Alexander, Hephæstion would have lost his compliment, as it must infallibly have prevented the mistake of the mother of Darius.

The success of General Howe; the loss of Philadelphia; as well as the ground given in the northern quarter by the retreat of General St Clair, were amply counterbalanced by the utter extinction of Burgoyne's army on the fifteenth of October. As Reading lay in the route from Saratoga to Yorktown, where Congress was now assembled, we received, before that body, the particulars of this glorious event from Major Wilkinson, who was charged with the dispatches of General Gates. But, without loading my Memoirs with obvious and trite reflections on this memorable occurrence, I turn a moment to myself to observe, That, were I a prey to the vulture of ill-starred ambition, the mention of a gentleman, with whom I commenced in the same rank my military career, and who is now in the chief command of the American forces, might suggest, somewhat unpleasantly, the immeasurable distance he has left me behind; but the recollections his name awakens with in-

finitely more interest, are of a nature wholly different. They relate to pursuits and occupations of a character more congenial to that season of life when, as a student of physic, he attended medical lectures in Philadelphia, before either of us wore a uniform, and before a foundation was laid for the many strifes which have since ensued. Thus much, without connecting him with any of them, I freely pay to the remembrance of an early friendship, ever renewed when casualties have brought us together, maugre the estranging influence of different party-associations.

The ensuing winter, at Reading, was gay and agreeable, notwithstanding that the enemy was in possession of the metropolis. The society was sufficiently large and select; and a sense of common suffering in being driven from their homes had the effect of more closely uniting its members. Disasters of this kind, if duly weighed, are not grievously to be deplored. The variety and bustle they bring along with them give a spring to the mind; and when illumined by hope, as was now the case, they are, when present, not painful, and when past, they are among the incidents most pleasing in retrospection. Besides the families established in this place, it was seldom without a number of visitors, gentlemen of the army and others. Hence, the dissipation of cards, sleighing parties, balls, &c. was freely indulged. General Mifflin, at this era, was at home, a chief out of war, complaining, though not ill, considerably malcontent, and apparently not in high favour at head-quarters. According to him, the ear of the commander-in-chief was exclusively possessed by Greene, who was represented to be neither the most wise, the most brave, nor most patriotic of counsellors. In short, the campaign, in this

quarter, was stigmatised as a series of blunders; and the incapacity of those who had conducted it unsparingly reprobated. The better fortune of the northern army was ascribed to the superior talents of its leader; and it began to be whispered, that Gates was the man who should, of right, have the station so incompetently sustained by Washington. There was, to all appearance, a cabal forming for his deposition, in which, it is not improbable, that Gates, Mifflin, and Conway, were already engaged, and in which the congenial spirit of Lee, on his exchange, immediately took a share. The well known apostrophe of Conway to America, importing, "That Heaven had passed a decree in her favour or her ruin, must long before have ensued, from the imbecility of her military counsels," was, at this time, familiar at Reading; and I heard him myself, when he was afterwards on a visit to that place, express himself to the effect: "That no man was more a gentleman than General Washington, or appeared to more advantage at his table, or in the usual intercourse of life; but, as to his talents for the command of an army, (with a French shrug,) they were miserable indeed." Observations of this kind, continually repeated, could not fail to make an impression within the sphere of their circulation; and it may be said, that the popularity of the commander-in-chief was a good deal impaired at Reading. As to myself, however, I can confidently aver, that I never was proselyted, or gave into the opinion for a moment, that any man in America was worthy to supplant the exalted character that presided in her army. I might have been disposed, perhaps, to believe that such talents as were possessed by Lee, could they be brought to act subordinately, might often be useful to him; but I ever thought it would be a fatal error to put any other

in his place. Nor was I the only one who forbore to become a partizan of Gates. Several others thought they saw symptoms of selfishness in the business; nor could the great *eclat* of the northern campaign convince them that its hero was superior to Washington. The duel which afterwards took place between Generals Conway and Cadwalader, though immediately proceeding from an unfavourable opinion expressed by the latter of the conduct of the former at Germantown, had, perhaps, a deeper origin, and some reference to this intrigue;* as I had the means of knowing that General Cadwalader, suspecting Mifflin had instigated Conway to fight him, was extremely earnest to obtain data from a gentleman who lived in Reading, whereon to ground a serious explanation with Mifflin. So much for the manœuvring, which my location at one of its principal seats brought me acquainted with; and which its authors were soon after desirous of burying in oblivion.

Among the persons who, this winter, spent much time

---

* Not that General Cadwalader was induced from the intrigue to speak unfavourably of General Conway's behaviour at Germantown. That of itself was a sufficient ground of censure. Conway, it seems, during the action, was found in a farm-house by Generals Reed and Cadwalader. Upon their inquiring the cause, he replied, in great agitation, that his horse was wounded in the neck. Being urged to get another horse, and, at any rate, to join his brigade, which was engaged, he declined it, repeating, that his horse was wounded in the neck. Upon Conway's applying to Congress, some time after, to be made a Major-general, and earnestly urging his suit, Cadwalader made known this conduct of his at Germantown; and it was for so doing that Conway gave the challenge, the issue of which was, his being dangerously wounded in the face from the pistol of General Cadwalader. He recovered, however, and, some time after, went to France.

in Reading, was one Luttiloe, a foreigner, who was afterwards arrested in London, on suspicion of hostile designs; also Mr William Duer, who either was, or lately had been, a member of Congress. His character is well known. He was of the dashing cast, a man of the world, confident and animated, with a promptitude in displaying the wit and talents he possessed, with very little regard to the decorum which either time or place imposed. Of this he gave an instance one day, at Mr Edward Biddle's, which, had it been on a theatre, where the royal cause was predominant, I should have relished; as it was, it was unpleasant to me. Captain Speke of the British army, a prisoner, was present, with his eye on a newspaper, several of which had lately come out of Philadelphia, when Duer, taking up another, began to read aloud, commenting, with much sarcasm, on the paragraphs as he went along. Speke bore it a good while; but, at length, Duer's remarks became so pinching, that he was roused to a reply. To this he received a ready rejoinder, and a warm altercation was on the point of taking place, when Captain Speke prudently took the resolution of relinquishing the field; and, taking up his hat, abruptly retired. As Speke, although a thorough Englishman, was a well bred man, with whom I had become acquainted, and had exchanged some civilities, I was not a little hurt at this circumstance, as the company in general seemed to be. Duer, for his part, triumphed in his success, displaying a heart, which, however bold on the safe side of the lines, might, nevertheless, have been sufficiently meek on the other; at least, such a conduct would but conform to the result of my observations on persons who play the bashaw in prosperity; and I believe it is pretty generally agreed to be no mark of game

to crow upon a dunghill. While upon the subject of Captain Speke, I will finish the little I have to say of him. He belonged, if my recollection does not fail me, to the same regiment with Mr Becket; at least, he was well acquainted with him, and told me he had heard him speak of me. He was young and lively, with an addiction to that sly significance of remark, characteristic both of his profession and his nation; and which may be pardoned, when accompanied with good humour. Taking up my hat one day, when at his quarters to take coffee with him and one or two others of his fellow prisoners, he observed, that it was a very decent one, which is more, said he, than I can say of those generally worn by the officers of your army; they have precisely what we call in England the *damn my eyes cock*. At another time, having called upon me at my mother's, I was led, by some circumstance, to advert to the awkward form and low ceiling of the room; but "Faith," said he, looking round, "you have made the most of it with furniture;" which was true enough, as it was unmercifully overloaded with chairs, tables, and family pictures. Such freedoms may fully justify me in scanning Mr Speke, who, to say the truth, was, in point of information, far above the level which is allowed to the gentlemen of the British army by Swift, and other writers of their nation. As to "your *Noveds*, and *Blutarks*, and *Omurs*, and stuff," I know not, if he was of the noble captain's opinion, in Hannah's animated plea for turning Hamilton's bawn into a barrack; but he had read some of the English poets; and, speaking of Prior and Pope, I remember his saying, that the former was much preferred to the latter by people of taste in England. But grant what we may to the sprightliness and easy gaiety of

Prior, this can hardly be the award of sound criticism. Being heartily tired of the condition of a captive, Mr Speke was extremely anxious to get rid of it, and to this effect suggested, that by mutual exertion we might be exchanged for each other. He said, that if I could obtain permission for him to go into Philadelphia on parole, he had no doubt of having sufficient interest to effect it. I accordingly took the liberty to write to General Washington on the subject, but was a long time in suspense as to the success of my application. An additional inducement to the step was, that both Colonel Miles and Major West had, by requisition of General Howe, repaired to Philadelphia; and I every day expected a similar summons. It had been given out that these gentlemen had not observed all the passiveness which had been enjoined upon them by their parole; and I well knew that I was charged with a like transgression. I had spoken freely, it is true, of the treatment of prisoners; and this was considered by the Tories, and some of the British officers in our hands, as very unpardonable in one who had been favoured as I had been; and I was aware that I was threatened with a retraction of the indulgence. I remained, however, unmolested. The situation of Miles and West, in the neighbourhood of the army at White Marsh, was, perhaps, the circumstance which gave colour to the accusation against them; but they were not long detained.

Besides, that it would have ill comported with the indulgence I enjoyed, it was abhorrent to my feelings to behave haughtily to a prisoner. There were two puppies, however, in that predicament, in whom I immediately recognized the insolent manner of a genuine *scoundrel in red;* and these I cautiously avoided. They

were subalterns; one of whom, of the name of Wilson, was base enough, under the false pretence of being related to the Captain Wilson, who he had some how learned had treated me with civility, to borrow a few guineas of my mother, which it unluckily slipped his memory to repay. Had I been aware of the application, the loan would have been prevented; but I never knew of the circumstance until after his exchange. With the exception of these fellows, who, I had the mortification to hear, had found their way to General Washington's table, at the time of their being taken, all the prisoners in Reading behaved with much decency. Among them were a number of German officers, who had really the appearance of being what we call downright men. There was a Major Stine, a Captain Sobbe, and a Captain Wetherholt, of the Hessians, whom I sometimes fell in with. There were several others with whom I was not acquainted, and whose names I do not remember. One old gentleman, a colonel, was a great professional reader, whom, on his application, I accommodated with such books of the kind as I had. Another of them, a very portly personage, apparently replete with national phlegm, was, nevertheless, enthusiastically devoted to music, in which he was so absorbed as seldom to go abroad. I did not know this musical gentleman except by sight; but I have understood from those who did, that, call upon him at what time they would, and like another Achilles in retirement,

> Amus'd at ease, the godlike man they found,
> Pleas'd with the solemn harp's harmonious sound:

for this was the obsolete instrument from which he extracted the sounds that so much delighted him. But of all the prisoners, one Graff, a Brunswick officer, taken

by General Gates's army, was admitted to the greatest privileges. Under the patronage of Dr Potts, who had been principal surgeon in the Northern Department, he had been introduced to our dancing parties; and, being always afterwards invited, he never failed to attend. He was a young man, of mild and pleasing manners, with urbanity enough to witness the little triumphs of party without being incited to ill humour by them. Overhearing a dance called for, one evening, which we had named *Burgoyne's Surrender*, he observed to his partner, that it was a very pretty dance, notwithstanding the name; and that General Burgoyne himself would be happy to dance it in such good company. There was, also, a Mr Stutzoe, of the Brunswick dragoons, than whose I have seldom seen a figure more martial; or a manner more indicative of that manly openness, which is supposed to belong to the character of a soldier. I had a slight acquaintance with him; and recollect, with satisfaction, his calling on me at the time of his exchange to make me his acknowledgments, as he was pleased to say, for my civilities to the prisoners.

Perhaps I may be excused for these trifling details, when it is considered, that they serve to mark the temper of the times, and to show, that they were not all fire and fury, as certain modern pretenders, to the spirit of *seventy-six*, have almost persuaded us they were. It ought to be granted, indeed, that an equal degree of toleration was not every where to be met with. It would scarcely have been found in that description of persons, which soon arrogated, and have since voted, themselves the exclusive possession of all the patriotism in the nation. Even that small portion of the monopolists which resided at Reading, revolted at a moderation they did

not understand; and all who were less violent and bigoted than themselves were branded as Tories. All the families which had removed from Philadelphia were involved in this reproach; and, in their avoidance of the enemy, to the manifest injury of their affairs, they were supposed to exhibit proofs of disaffection. Nor was I much better off: my having risked myself in the field was nothing: I should have staid at home, talked big, been a militia-man, and hunted Tories.

In confirmation of my remark, that toleration was not among the virtues affected by those who were emphatically styled THE PEOPLE, I will instance the case of a young Scotch officer, of the name of Dunlap, who was one day beset in the street by certain persons overflowing with Whiggism; and, for presuming to resent the insults he received from them, was not only severely cudgelled, but afterwards put to jail. This treatment might have fairly squared with that of our officers from the royal side, in relation to the fish-sellers; though I will undertake to aver, that, generally speaking, the prisoners in our hands were treated both with lenity and generosity. Some time after this affray, happening, at a table in Philadelphia, to be placed by the side of Dr Witherspoon, then a member of Congress, I took occasion to mention it to him; and to intercede for his good offices, in regard to the liberation of Dunlap, who was still in jail. I counted something upon the national spirit, supposed to be so prevalent among North Britons; and yet more upon the circumstance of knowing from Dunlap and two other young Scotchmen, his fellow-prisoners, that Dr Witherspoon had been well acquainted with their families. I did not find, however, that the Doctor was much melted to compassion for the

mishap of his countryman, as he contented himself with coldly observing, that if I could suggest any substantial ground for him to proceed upon, he would do what he could for the young man. It appeared to me, that enough had been suggested by my simple relation of the facts; and I had nothing more to offer. But whether or not my application was of any benefit to its object, my presentation of the *laddies* to the recollection of the Doctor seemed to have something of national interest in it; and had the effect to incite him to a shrewd remark according to his manner. He told me he had seen the young men soon after they had been taken, and was surprised to find one of them, whose name I forget, so much of a cub. His father, said he, was a very sprightly fellow when I knew him. This lad is the fruit of a second marriage; and I immediately concluded, when I saw him, said the Doctor, that Jemmey or Sawney something, mentioning the father's name, had taken some *clumsy girl* to wife for the sake of a fortune.

On looking back here, and adverting to the free observations I have, from time to time, made, both on revolutionary men and measures, I am aware that I have no forgiveness to expect from many, for attempting to rub off the fine varnish which adheres to them. But I set out with the avowed design of declaring the truth; and to this I have most sacredly and conscientiously conformed according to my persuasions, even as to the colouring of each particular I have touched upon. The same veracity shall direct my future delineations, well knowing, that, independently of my obligation to do justice, this alone must circumscribe the merit of my Memoirs. That we were not, and still are not, without

patriotism, in an equal degree, perhaps, with other nations, I have no inclination to question; but that a noble disinterestedness and willingness to sacrifice private interest to public good, should be the general disposition any where, my acquaintance with human nature neither warrants me in asserting or believing. The prevalence of generous sentiment, of which, no doubt, there is a portion in all communities, depends very much upon those who have the direction of their affairs. Under the guidance of Washington, both during the revolution and his administration of the general government, the honourable feelings being cherished and brought into action, they had a temporary predominance over those which were selfish and base. But these, in their turn, having acquired the ascendancy, we may sadly recognize with the poet, that

> An empty form
> Is the weak virtue that amid the shade
> Lamenting lies, with future schemes amus'd,
> While wickedness and folly, *kindred powers*,
> Confound the world.

The liberty I have taken, in making the reader the confident of the attachment I carried with me into the army, and brought home with me, unimpaired, on the extension of my parole, imposes it upon me, as a sort of duty in point of poetical justice, to announce my marriage, which took place in the spring of 1778. But this was not until my exchange had been notified to me by Colonel Boudinot, the commissary of prisoners: and having now little before me but the vapid occurrences of retired life, I shall here hold myself absolved from further attention to any matters merely of a personal or private nature. Captain Speke had gone into Philadel-

phia some time before; and it is not improbable, that we had been exchanged for each other; but of this I was not informed. I was now at liberty to act, and was also liable to be called into service; but, however willing I might have been to consider myself a soldier, or to obey orders, I had no regiment to join or men to command. The third battalion still existed in name, but with scarce a particle of its original materials. It was entirely changed as to officers and men, with the exception, perhaps, of one or two of the former, that had escaped captivity by absence on account of sickness or otherwise. The affair of Fort Washington had an effect not unlike that of entering into a monastery in England, in days of yore: as, in the one case, a man was said to be *civilly* dead, so, in the other, he was *militarily* so; and although as much alive as ever to corporeal wants and necessities, yet was he dead as an antediluvian, as to all purposes of worldly advantage. Nor was it the garrison alone, but the very event itself, that was offensive to remembrance; and it has grown into a sort of a fashion among our annalists, to pass lightly over this inauspicious transaction, somewhat in the same spirit that Rome, according to Lucan, was willing to forget the disastrous day of Pharsalia.

> Tempora signavit leviorum Roma malorum,
> Hunc voluit nescire diem.

The compiler of the article America, in Mr Dobson's Encyclopædia, does indeed inform us, that there was such a fortress, which, somehow or other, fell into the hands of the British, who, by the bye, did not catch a man of the garrison. Other chroniclers, of an humbler class, are equally concise upon the occasion; and even the very fanciful biographer, who gives to the boyhood

of General Washington certain prettinesses we should have little suspected it of, and to General Wayne the manners of a rustic booby, with the blundering facilities of a true Hibernian, finds in it no attractions for the strokes of his very popular pencil. These are but summaries, it is true, in which we ought not to look for full details; yet, as they are more generally read than ampler histories, and thence tend to fix the colours of the time, it is of consequence that they should exhibit some resemblance of the facts and characters they profess to treat of. *

But whatever may have been the common reluctance to advert to the unlucky occurrences of the war, and the propensity to dwell only on pleasing ones, nothing can be more fair and free from misrepresentation than were the official statements both of Congress and General Washington. Even the British officers, from an experience of their veracity, came to consider the name of Charles Thomson as a voucher not to be questioned; nor was less respect due to the communications of the commander-in-chief, from which the annunciations of Congress were generally derived. Such was the spirit and the policy of *seventy-six*; and they were successful as they were honourable. Why, then, they should have been so lamentably departed from, and a *suppressio veri* have become the primary maxim of our government, it is for the republicans of the Gallic school to explain.

---

* There is no allusion in these remarks to the Life of Washington, by Dr Ramsay, which, in fact, I did not see until after they were written. Though brief on the transaction, as the nature of his work required, he touches it with a due regard to truth and the reputation of those concerned.

CHAPTER XIII.

American Affectation in Titles—Prisoners at Long Island—Supernumerary Officers—Character of General Lee—Military Anecdotes—The Author enrolled in the Militia—Quaker Principles—Character of Dr Franklin—Mrs Macaulay—Milton's Sentiments of Democracy—Party Spirit—The Author appointed Prothonotary of the County of Dauphin.

My hankerings after the business of the tented field, which, dog's life as it is, I had become fond of, had led me to visit the camps both of White Marsh and Valley Forge, at each of which I spent a day or two. At the first we had a better army than I had yet seen. The post, too, I thought a good one; and it soon after appeared to be sufficiently respected by General Howe, to induce him to decline attacking it, although he had apparently drawn out his army for the purpose. At Valley Forge the aspect of affairs was different, the army being reduced and in a wretched state. Baron de Steuben was, however, here; and just beginning to infuse into it that discipline and regularity, in which it was still too deficient. On reaching the camp, I shaped my course for the tent of Colonel Stewart, who, I was informed, was at a barbacue on the banks of the Schuylkill; and being directed to the place, I found him there, together with the greater part of the principal officers of the army. It is scarcely necessary to say that the commander-in-chief was not there, nor any of those more immediately attached to his person. Neither was Ge-

neral Lee of the company. He had been invited, but had drily replied, that "he did not like barbacues." In fact, they are seldom a very attic entertainment; and it is probable that Lee's mind was not disposed to hilarity. He had but lately been exchanged; and it is not uncharitable to suppose, that he was beginning to discover, that, much as he hated the British court, he was not, as he had once supposed, *Americanior ipsis Americanis*, more American than the Americans themselves. It being late in the afternoon, the party was joyous and pretty full of liquor; and I had the chagrin to observe, that the drummer and fifer who made music for them, and were deserters from the enemy, were sneering at some of the gentlemen, who did not entirely preserve the dignity of their stations; and were by much too liberal in the reciprocal use of the term general, for that oblivion to self-consequence, which is the most graceful attendant of condition, and so much appreciated in the British army, as to introduce a species of affectation in the other extreme, substituting Mr for the title of rank. Lee, for instance, says Mr Howe and Mr Wolfe; and it was not always a disrespect, when a British officer said Mr Washington. I am sensible that it is against the laws of good-fellowship for a sober man to make reflections upon a mellow company into which he may chance to be introduced; but I mention no names, and, indeed, my memory would hardly serve me were I disposed to do it. Still I have a perfect recollection of the circumstance; and cannot but recognize, that there was no time, at which the question sometimes peevishly asked by Conway, *Did Congress see you before they appointed you?* might not have been applicable to some of the officers of our army, in every grade.

On the first day of December 1777, my fellow-prisoners on Long Island were, on account of a suspected descent upon that place, put on board of a prison-ship, and there detained two weeks. Their treatment, it seems, was not to be complained of. It could hardly be otherwise, says the officer from whose information I give the statement, since it would not have been safe for any man or dozen of men to have treated us ill. During their confinement, Major Jack Stewart, before noticed in these Memoirs, and one or two others whom I do not remember, found means to make their escape. A boat one evening happened to be fastened to the vessel's side. The chance of escaping in her was immediately suggested by Lieutenants Forrest and Woodside, the latter also of Shee's regiment, and they resolved to make the attempt: but, previously to engaging in it, they stepped between decks, either for some papers or articles of clothing that were in their trunks. In the meantime, Stewart and the others availed themselves of the opportunity, quietly let themselves down into the boat, cast her off, and let her drift astern of the ship. They were lucky enough to get clear of her unperceived, and at length to reach the Jersey shore in safety, notwithstanding that their elopement was soon discovered. But it being dark, pursuit was unavailing, as were also some random shots fired upon the occasion. The disappointment to Forrest and Woodside, when they found themselves supplanted, was extreme; and still more cruel when it appeared that the adventurers had been successful.

Early in the spring, I think, of 1778, I got a letter from Major Williams acquainting me with his release, by exchange, if I am not mistaken. It breathed the most extravagant joy; and the excessive friskiness he describes

on touching our actual territory, put me in mind of that of Francis I., upon finding himself once more at liberty, after his long detention at Madrid. Williams, it is true, was not restored to a throne; but he was restored to his country; to the right of proclaiming his sentiments and wishes; to the right of loco-motion and action; and, above all, to the right of avenging his wrongs, and, particularly, a cruel confinement in the provost prison, from which his exchange had immediately delivered him. His motives, therefore, for exultation were not less than those of the king of France.

In the summer following I had also notice of the liberation of Mr Forrest, which, from the singularity of its circumstances, requires some detail. It had been a settled opinion among us at Flatbush, that if the place, or we who were stationed there, by a military operation, should fall into the hands of our people for ever so short a time, we were *ipso facto* released from the obligation of remaining with the enemy notwithstanding our parole; and it was under this idea, combined with a lucky and unexpected adventure, that Forrest found himself a freeman. I know not how far this opinion of ours may be conformable to the *jus belli* as established among nations, but it was our deduction from principles which we held to be correct, and of general and equal application. I think it is also recognized in the old play of Prisonbase, from which, if the idea was not original, it is more probable we derived it, than either from Grotius, Puffendorf, or Vattel. One Mariner, a New Yorker, in revenge for some real or supposed ill treatment from Matthews, the mayor of that city, made a descent, with a small party, upon the island, with the view of getting Matthews into his clutches, who, as I have already mentioned, had a house at

Flatbush, and generally slept there. He had it also in view to obtain the release of a Captain Flahaven, who had been billetted, in my place, on Jacob Suydam. Disappointed in both objects, he liberated Forrest by means of his magical power, and made prisoners of Mr Bache and Major Moncrief, the latter of whom spent much of his time at Flatbush, where he had a daughter. But I will give the relation in the words of Mr Forrest, who, on my application for the particulars of the event, has thus communicated them in answer to certain queries proposed. "Mariner was the man who took me from Long Island. He was a shoemaker, and had been long confined and cruelly used, as I understood, by Matthews, who, it seems, knew him personally. The name of the officer who lodged with me was Flahaven, a captain, who had been in the provost with Mariner, and whom he particularly wished to release; but, having changed his quarters, he could not be got at. Mariner crossed from the Jersey shore, and retreated to and landed at the place of his departure, or near it, a distance of two miles across. His party consisted originally of twenty militia men, in two flat-bottomed boats. At his landing on Long Island he left his two boats under the guard of five men, while he visited the interior; but these five hearing a firing, which was kept up upon us by the Flatbush guard while we were taking our prisoners, concluded that Mariner was defeated and taken; so, without farther ceremony, they took one of the boats and made their escape. The other boat, as we reached the shore, was just going adrift; we were much crowded in her, but it fortunately was very calm, otherwise we could not have weathered it. Matthews was on the top of his house at the time of the search for him. We got from our place of landing in waggons

to Princeton. Mr Bache and Moncrief lodged there in the same house with me for two or three days. How they were disposed of afterwards I do not know, as I was sent on with an explanatory letter from Governor Livingston to General Washington; but Bache, I think, was sent home shortly, and Moncrief also, (who was a good prize,) as a prisoner on parole. Mariner's party must have staid at Flatbush nearly two hours, for they were there some time before the alarm was taken, and there was afterwards time to dispatch an express to Brooklyn for assistance, and the reinforcement, which came in consequence, was pretty close upon us, as we could see them on the shore when we had left it about a quarter of an hour. This happened on the 15th of June 1778, the very day two years I had marched from Philadelphia."

From this episode it appears, that the moral of Æsop's fable, respecting the eagle at the top of the tree, that, by the law of power, had made free with the fox's whelps below, was very near being brought home to Mr Matthews. Mr Bache, as Forrest has told me, was overwhelmed with his disaster; and interceded with him, as, from his civility to us, he had a right to do, for his good offices with Governor Livingston, which, I have no doubt, were duly exerted for him. Major Moncrief, like an old soldier, submitted with a more equal mind to the fortune of war, reminding Bache, that he had often told him, they were not safe at Flatbush. But Bache had peculiar cause for dejection, on account of the consternation into which his wife and children had been thrown, by the attack of his house, and his being forcibly seized and borne away in the dead of the night. Upon delivering Governor Livingston's letter to General Washington, Forrest stated the circumstances under

which he had come out, and had conceived himself liberated, but added, that, if the act did not meet his excellency's entire approbation, he begged to be permitted to return immediately to New York. The general observed, that it was a nice case, on which much might be said on both sides, but that, at any rate, a return to confinement was unnecessary; that he was at liberty to go home, and that, if, upon consideration, he should be of opinion, that the mode of his release was not warranted by the rules and usages of war, a prisoner of equal rank should be exchanged for him. Not long after this enterprise of Mariner, a general exchange of prisoners took place, and all were put upon an equal footing. To beguile the tedious hours of captivity, Colonel Magaw had taken to himself a wife, as had one or two others.

A policy had arisen from the pressure of our affairs, to give every man a commission who was likely to pick up a few recruits. This, at least, was the case in Pennsylvania; hence, as to officers, all the regiments were not only complete, but overflowing; and upon the re-organization of the army, there were a great many supernumerary. Of this description, those who had been taken at Fort Washington emphatically were. They were considered as extinct, and their places had been supplied by others. A show, indeed, was made in the fall of 1778, of doing justice to their claims, so far as it might be practicable. But it was evident, that a reinstatement in the rank to which they were entitled by the rule of seniority, was not to be effected without extreme embarrassment, and injury to the service. A very few, who had been willing to engage in the scramble, had been retained; but none without the chagrin of seeing new men, and numbers who had originally ranked below

them, now above them. Captain Tudor contrived to squeeze in, as did also Captain Biles; and I do not recollect another of our regiment, except Bitting, who was provided for. He was a second lieutenant with us, and lost his life in the rank of a captain, at the time of the mutiny in the Pennsylvania line. In Marshall's Life of Washington, he is erroneously called Billing. But, on consideration, I rather think, that Bitting had not been a prisoner; and if so, he is no exception to the general exclusion, and his advance in rank is naturally accounted for. He was at liberty to attend to his interests. I never applied for reinstatement; but, had my country really wanted my services, and there been an opening, in which I could have been provided for, without too much degradation, I do not hesitate to say, that I should have laid aside all private considerations, and embraced it. To show that I do not exaggerate the difficulties which opposed a continuance in the army, I shall content myself with referring to two letters of General Washington upon the subject. In the first, dated the 10th of November 1777, addressed to Congress, he says: "Among the various difficulties attending the army, the adjustment of rank is not the least. This, owing to the several modes, the several principles that have prevailed in granting commissions, is involved in great perplexity. The officers of the Pennsylvania troops are in much confusion about it; in many instances, those who were junior in rank, from local and other circumstances, have obtained commissions older in date, than those which were granted afterwards to officers their superiors before. This, with many other irregularities, has been, and is, the cause of great uneasiness; and though precedency of rank, so claimed, should not be supported in justice, or

upon any principle, we find all, having the least pretence for the title, strenuous to support it, and willing to hold a superiority." In the second letter, dated August 21st, 1778, relating to the restoration of Colonel Rawlins, who had presented a memorial in behalf of himself and the officers of his corps, after doing ample justice to their bravery at Fort Washington, he says: "It seems hard that officers of their merit should be overlooked; and a loss to the service that they should remain unemployed; but the consequences that would attend their incorporation with any of the corps now existing appear too disagreeable to try the experiment." A conviction of the existence of these obstacles, concurring with motives of a private nature, induced me to renounce the soldier's trade; but not without poignantly regretting my "occupation gone," as often as "the spirit-stirring drum," or other "circumstance of glorious war," reminded me of the deprivation.

The bitter animosity of General Lee to the commander-in-chief after the affair of Monmouth is well known. There were not wanting a good number who thought he had been hardly dealt with; and, with these, added to many that had real or imaginary grounds for discontent, and the still greater number who already saw, in Washington, a character and influence which might give a check to the democratic career they had in contemplation, he was in hopes of being able to form a party. About this time, being in Philadelphia, I had the pleasure, one day, of meeting my old friend Edwards in the street. He was now the aid-de-camp of General Lee, with the rank of major. He was lavish in the praise of his general, whom he spoke of as one with whose conversation, abounding with wit and instruction, I could

not but be delighted, and proposed taking me to dine with him that very day. While we were yet upon his subject, the General appeared on the other side of the street, and crossing over to us, I had the honour of being presented to him. He soon, however, marred Edwards's proposal of dining at his quarters, by asking where he dined, and giving him to understand that he, the General, did not dine at home. Whether he was now in one of his saving moods, to which he was said to be occasionally addicted, and only meant this as a *ruse de guerre* to keep the war from his own territories, I know not, but certain it is, that Edwards had calculated upon a different arrangement, and fully expected to have owed his dinner of the day to the cook of his General. After a few minutes conversation I left him, but not before agreeing with Edwards upon a time and place of meeting next day.

The Life of General Lee, as presented in the volume published by one of his friends, under the title of Memoirs, holds out very salutary instruction to factious and discontented spirits. Though he commences his career among us as an American and a democrat, he at length subsides in the Englishman and aristocrat. He finds out that he has kept very bad company in America; and that her independence, which he has been among the most ardent to promote, will be a curse rather than a blessing to her. Washington, to him, becomes another George the Third; and his "earwigs," courtiers, as corrupt as those of any *sceptered calf, wolf, hog, or ass;* to use the language of his letter to Dr Rush. It must be confessed, however, that, if he acted to the best of his judgment at Monmouth, his treatment is to be lamented as a hard and ungenerous return for the zeal he once ma-

nifested in our cause. But his conduct in this affair, to say the least of it, betrays a total want of American feeling. Having, in the latter part of his captivity, been treated with attention by the British officers, his old discontents appear to have been effaced by the greater poignancy of new ones; and if, as has been asserted, he exclaimed, in the hearing of his troops, that "the British grenadiers never run," it would almost seem a sufficient ground to convict him of disaffection, if not treachery. I shall not, however, impute them to him; neither am I prepared to say that his conduct was unmilitary. I would rather suppose if he committed a fault it was because he was too respectful of the enemy; and that he was too scientific, too much of a reasoner, for a merely executive officer; "for action too refined," as Pope says, or as Voltaire expresses it:

> Mais souvent il se trompe à force de prudence,
> Il est irresolu par trop de prevoyance,
> Moins agissant qu'habile.—

As to his early republicanism, and fancied attachment to liberty and the rights of man, there is no reason to think him insincere. That he cordially detested, at least, the courtly arts for which he had not temper; and in whose career, if he ever tried it, he had been far outstripped by more pliant competitors, I have not the smallest doubt; but, if he supposed by an exchange of the sovereign *one* for the sovereign *many*, he was to restore the reign of manly candour and blunt honesty, how much, how very much, alas, was he deceived!

With all his abilities and acquaintance with the polite world, the general was certainly a very indiscreet man, with little dignity of character: Witness the frequent

scrapes he got into, and particularly the ridiculous one with Miss Franks, in which the most complete success of the *jeu d'esprit* could have added nothing to the fame of the major-general.

In my interview with Edwards the next day, he gave me a number of military anecdotes, and let me into the state of parties in the army. As might be supposed, he was a warm partisan of Lee, though, at the same time, expressing great respect for the virtues of the commander-in-chief. Among other things, he gave me the details of Lee's quarrel with Mr William Henry Drayton, repeating the words of the letter of defiance, of which he was the bearer, and in which Mr Drayton is sarcastically represented as a mere Malvolio, &c.—also of the duel with Colonel Laurens, in which he acted as the second or friend of Lee. Colonel Laurens and his attendant, Colonel Hamilton, were, it seems, rather late in coming to the ground. During the delay produced by this circumstance, Edwards took occasion to amuse his principal, if amusement it might be called, with some metaphysical subtilties on predestination, free-will, &c. a little in the style of the disquisition of the Brissotines on a future state, when on their way to the guillotine. From the want of punctuality in the adversaries, he also suggested that they might not come at all; but Lee replied, there was no danger of that, as Colonel Laurens was a man of unquestionable bravery; and the observation was immediately verified by his appearance. The manner of fighting was somewhat new; and, if I am not mistaken, it was on Lee's suggestion it was adopted. Taking their ground, and facing each other, it was agreed, that either should fire when he thought proper. Accordingly, they both advanced; and the effect was, that, at the same in-

stant, each presented and drew the trigger. Colonel Laurens's ball grazed the side of General Lee, carrying away some flesh, and producing a considerable effusion of blood. The principals proposed another shot; but the seconds agreed that enough had been done, and so the affair ended, without the smallest bearing, however, on the point in controversy, to wit, whether General Lee was right or wrong in speaking reproachfully of the commander-in-chief; and only establishing the fact, that the combatants could risk their lives with the gallantry and self-possession of soldiers and men of honour.

Major Edwards farther gave me the particulars of a similar affair, in which he himself had been concerned, as principal, in Carolina; and in which the small knowledge he had derived from me in the noble science of fencing had enabled him to triumph over an adversary, who thought to obtain an advantage of him, by commuting the pistol, with which it had been at first agreed to fight, for the small sword. His skill in the weapon was not, indeed, brought to the test; but the readiness he evinced to put it to issue, induced his prevaricating opponent to succumb and make him concessions.

From his aptitude to take the tone of good company, and his close intimacy with Lee, whose manners and phraseology were in the style of the highest military school, this gentleman, whose first appearance had been so unpromising, had become a distinguished proficient in all the cavalier airs and "convenient seeming" of a man of the sword; of which, the favour of Lee, in selecting him for his second in his duels, may be considered as a proof; as the devising to him a third part of his landed estate in Virginia may be taken as a voucher for his satisfaction with him in the capacity of his aid-de-camp.

As soon as it was understood at Reading that I was no longer in the army, care was taken to have me enrolled in the militia; and for declining to perform a tour of duty, which was immediately imposed upon me, I found myself fined in a sum, which I do not now recollect, but which, when reduced to specie, was far from inconsiderable. I must confess I considered this as very unfair treatment; and, accordingly, submitted my case, in a memorial, to President Reed, who shortly after came to Reading, in consequence of a proclaimed intention to visit the different parts of the state, for the purpose of hearing and redressing grievances. I was not at home when he arrived, but had left my memorial with a friend to be presented to him. It was very favourably received, the gentleman who delivered it being instructed to inform me, that the President would have been glad to have seen me at Reading; that he considered the fine which had been imposed upon me very improper, and that he would do what he could to prevent its exaction. His interposition proved effectual; and I had no farther molestation from the militia-men.

During the high-handed game that was at this time playing by that description of patriots, who, from their close adherence to their homes, might emphatically be said to be fighting *pro focis*, a Mr Thomas Parvin, of the Society of Friends, was an object of much wanton oppression. He resided at Maiden-creek, about six miles from Reading, and was nearly broken up by the levies on his property for taxes and militia fines. A cow or a horse, for instance, was often taken and sold for some trifling demand, and no surplus returned. Having sons grown up, and enrolled in the militia, he was the more exposed to rapacity. He frequently came to my mother's to vend

some product of his farm, and, talking with him one day on the subject of his grievances, I was drawn into a discussion of the non-resisting principles of his sect; and urging their impracticability in the present state of the world, in a manner that discovered sympathy for his sufferings, he was not displeased, and proposed lending me a treatise in defence of their tenets, which he begged I would read, and give him my opinion of. In a few days, he accordingly sent it, accompanied with a very long letter, so accurately written in all respects, as to convince me that Mr Parvin was a well educated man, and no mean polemic. In compliance with his request, after reading his pamphlet, I gave him, pretty fully, my observations in writing; and here I concluded the discussion would terminate. In a few weeks afterwards, however, I found it renewed in a letter from Anthony Benezet, of Philadelphia. This pious and truly benevolent man thus explains, in his first sentence, the cause of his addressing me:—

"Esteemed Friend,

"My friend, Thomas Parvin, having communicated to me thy remarks with respect to the sentiments many in our society hold in the case of war, I found my mind drawn affectionately to salute thee, and take the liberty to inclose thee a collection of religious tracts, which I have, at different times, been instrumental in publishing." And he is further pleased to say—"I am persuaded, that, to a man of thy generous turn of mind, many of the sentiments will not be disagreeable, particularly the extract from the writings of Soame Jenyns," &c. This was an extract from his View of the Internal Evidence of the Christian Religion. There were several

other tracts in the volume, one of which, A Letter from Elisabeth Webb to Anthony William Boehm, Mr Benezet adds, "I think might prove agreeable to thy mother and aunt, whom I affectionately salute."† As it is not my intention to lead the reader into the subject of this correspondence, it is enough to have barely stated it; and it appears to me, that I should have been wanting to myself had I suppressed an occurrence which procured me the good opinion of these plain, but innocious, intelligent, and pious men.

In the summer, probably of 1782, or 1783, or thereabouts, Mr Ralph Izard, and Captain Gadsden, of South Carolina, being on a tour through Pennsylvania, brought me a letter of introduction from Colonel Magaw, at Carlisle. Being desirous to render them all the attention in my power, I had the pleasure of often being with them. Captain Gadsden was a young man, who had, perhaps, never been out of America; but Mr Izard, who was advanced in years, had spent much of his time in Europe, and was very entertaining on the subject of his travels, giving me, among other things, a more satisfactory account of the awful wonders of Pompeii and Herculaneum than I had yet received. His manner, though blunt, announced the style of the best company; and though one of those who deliver their opinions with freedom and decision, he seemed untinctured with asperity upon every subject but one; but this never failed to produce some excitement, and his tone ever derived animation from the name of Dr Franklin. When, therefore, the Doctor's daughter, Mrs Bache, in speaking of the Carolinians, said, that "she hated them all from B to Z," the saying, I presume, must be taken inclusively; since, though I know nothing of the sentiments of Mr

Bee, I am enabled to pronounce those of Mr Izard to have been Anti-Franklinian in the extreme. What cause he had for this I do not know, but he certainly lost no opportunity of inveighing against the philosopher, to whom, he said, he had once been warmly attached, and had attended as his friend at the time he was so unmercifully bespattered by Wedderburne. I sat upon thorns, said Izard; and had it been me that had been so grossly insulted, I should instantly have repelled the attack in defiance of every consequence, whereas, this old man sat cowering like a caitiff, without daring to utter a syllable. But in repeating the words, I do not join in the reproach of the Doctor's forbearance. As he was not a ready public speaker, silence was, perhaps, most prudent and dignified. The extreme wariness of his character, it is true, is not more congenial to my feelings than to those of Mr Izard: Nevertheless, when I reflect that he possessed qualities, which have not only enabled him to extend the limits of human knowledge, but have pre-eminently entitled him to the fame of a wise man; that, to solidity of understanding, he added the amenity of wit and good humour, and that his weight and influence, so far as I know, have never been lent to inhumanity, immorality, injustice, or oppression, I am entirely disposed to acquiesce in the award of the world, and to consider him as one who has done honour to his country. He died before the volcanic explosion of the French Revolution; but, as he tells us in his life, he had an early and steady abhorrence of tyranny, we cannot, without giving the lie to this assertion, suppose, if he had lived, that he could, in any event, have been a Jacobin or the fautor of a ferocious despotism.

Mr George Lux, of Baltimore, who had married a

daughter of Mr Edward Biddle, was at this time at Reading, and by me introduced to Mr Izard and Mr Gadsden. Mr Lux was the greatest reader in a certain line I have ever known. His historical knowledge was accurate to minuteness; and he seemed intimately acquainted with the ramifications and affinities, not only of the great families in England, but also of those in every part of the continent of Europe. Of these he spoke with a precision which astonished Mr Izard, particularly when he learned, that he had never been out of America. "To what purpose is it," said he, when afterwards speaking of Mr Lux, "that I have been travelling all my life, when this gentleman, who has never left his arm-chair, knows more of the countries I have visited than I do; and what perplexes me most of all is, that he even knows better than myself the public business I was employed in, and which was of a secret nature." But this latter knowledge was obtained by Lux's having officiated, for his amusement, (having nothing better to do,) as Secretary to the Board of Congress, which had regulated Mr Izard's affair. Yet, with all this information, Mr Lux appeared to me to possess but a very moderate share of judgment or discernment, and to be little more than a dry matter-of-fact man. He had a handsome paternal estate, and at Chatsworth, his seat near Baltimore, was in the habit of entertaining all strangers of distinction, though so shamefully negligent of his person, which was naturally none of the best, as to seem not at all adapted to this function. Among his guests he was once honoured with the company of Mrs Macaulay, the historian, whom, at her request, as he informed me, he accompanied to Mount Vernon, on a visit to General Washington, where they staid some

days. While in conversation, one day after dinner, the lady, in a high republican strain, took occasion to expatiate on the vast advantages of rotation in office. This was in the manner of an appeal to her host, of whose approbation she seemed to be secure; but as the General was rather a practical or accidental, than a republican by preference, I will not say a republican *malgre lui*, * he could only carry his politeness so far as not absolutely to dissent from the opinion; and there was, of course, no commingled flow of soul upon the occasion. But Mrs Macaulay was not the only person of her nation, who has found the republicanism of the New World lagging shamefully behind that of the Old. Experience is the best of schools; and, in the philanthropic science of levelling, as in others, we may truly say:

> Here, shallow draughts intoxicate the brain,
> And drinking largely sobers us again.

One of the strongest cases in point, and which has been strangely overlooked, is that of the poet Milton, against whom the great Samuel Johnson is supposed to be even more than usually intolerant. He certainly could not have been aware, nor Mr Boswell either, (or from his profusion, we should have heard of it,) of the following passage in the Paradise Regained, the last work, and, therefore, to be presumed to contain the last and most solemn opinion of its author.

> And what the people, but a herd confus'd,
> A miscellaneous rabble, who extol

* It may be safely averred, that a majority of our best Whigs of 1776 were not republicans by predilection; but still the best of practical republicans, as honest and virtuous men.

Things vulgar, and well weigh'd, scarce worth the praise:
They praise and they admire they know not what;
And know not whom, but as one leads the other;
And what delight to be by such extoll'd,
To live upon their tongues, and be their talk,
Of whom to be despised were no small praise.

It would be difficult to conceive sentiments more at variance with the republican maxim of *Vox populi vox Dei*; and yet they are the sentiments of the sublime poet John Milton, the democrat, the regicide, the secretary and parasite of Oliver Cromwell. From this one man we may learn the character of his sect, the immaculate, people-adoring republicans of the present hour. For the love of liberty, they will kill a king, yet fawn upon a usurper, clothed with a power infinitely less accountable, infinitely more oppressive and tremendous. The crime, then, is not in "one proud man's lording it over the rest," * but that he should lord it in opposition to our particular interests and prejudices: In the direction of these, he cannot be too high-handed.

Party-spirit, in Pennsylvania, had by this time taken a consistency, and the politicians were divided into *Constitutionalists* and *Republicans*. The first rallied round the constitution already formed, which was reprobated by the others for its total deficiency in checks and counterbalancing powers, thence tending, as it was alleged, to rash, precipitate, and oppressive proceedings. The term republicans was embraced, as recognizing the principles of the Revolution, and as indicative, perhaps, of tenets

---

* Terras tot posse sub uno
Esse viro.

LUCAN.

which admitted the utility of modifications and restraints in a system resting on the broad base of general suffrage and popular sovereignty. The word *democrat* was not yet much in use, neither was the distinction established between a democrat and a republican, which appears to consist in the idea, that the former is for placing the whole governing power in the "multitude told by the head;" the latter for giving it some checks, and infusing into it a leaven of what is termed by Mr Burke the natural aristocracy of a country. But to do this, where the source of power has been diligently explored and discovered too, like that of the Nile, and universal suffrage, with the right to pull down and build up again, thence recognized as a fundamental, may well puzzle the learned advocates for strong executives, and independent judiciaries, and in the end, perhaps, turn all their fine-spun theories into lumber, little better than nonsense. However, like the rest of my countrymen,

> With sad civility I read,
> With honest anguish and an aching head.

To counteract the constitutionalists, the disaffected to the Revolution were invited to fall into the republican ranks; and there was an agreement, or at least an understanding, among the lawyers, who were generally on the republican side, neither to practise or accept of any office under the constitution, which, in that case, they would be bound, by an oath, to support. But the constitutionalists had a Roland for their Oliver. They had prothonotaryships, attorney-generalships, chief-justiceships, and what not, to dispose of. Patriots have their price, 'tis said; and persons were found to accept of these, some of whom, indeed, had cautiously avoided committing

themselves by the promulgation of rash anathemas. All, however, were not so fortunate, if fame is to be believed; and although the fruit was to them forbidden, they were tempted, and did eat. But, in this age of thrift and self-aggrandisement, I am not going to impute it to them as a crime. Who would now reject the means of bettering his condition, through the childish fear of being charged with a dereliction of principle? It is not of such imbecility that the world is now "the friend, or the world's law." Buonaparte would never have made himself a consul, much less an emperor, by such squeamishness.

Soon after the organization of the Republican Society, it was proposed to me by my friend Major Scull, then in Philadelphia, to join it; but, after the recent agitations of the greater contest with the mother country, I felt no inclination to disturb myself with domestic broils. My eyes, indeed, were open to the illiberality of the constitutionalists, and the extreme jealousy they already manifested against those who had been in the army; but, on the other hand, so far as I can recal my feelings, I did not fully relish the policy of courting the disaffected and those who had played a safe and calculating game. But they were rewarded for it: pelf, it appeared, was a better goal than liberty; and at no period in my recollection was the worship of Mammon more widely spread, more sordid and disgusting. Those who had fought the battles of the country, at least in the humbler grades, had, as yet, earned nothing but poverty and contempt; while their wiser fellow-citizens, who had attended to their interests, were the men of mark and consideration. As to military rank, no man seemed to be without it who had an inclination for it; and the title of Major was

the very lowest that a dasher of any figure would accept of. Nothing more was wanting for its attainment than to clap on a uniform and pair of epaulets, and scamper about with some militia general for a day or two; and thus the real soldier was superseded, even in the career of glory. Never having been good at a scramble, as already observed, whether honour or profit were the meed, I did not press into the field of pretension; and being in a state of apathy as to the political parties, I declined enlisting with either.

The agitations which now prevailed in the capital led to the well known outrage on Mr Wilson, who, for the exercise of his professional duty as a lawyer, in behalf of certain persons who had been prosecuted for treason, had been proscribed by the mobility. The punishment decreed for his crime was banishment to the enemy, yet in New York; and for the purpose of inflicting it, an attack, by men in arms, was made upon his house, into which a number of his friends had thrown themselves, with a determination to resist the assailants. A few lives were lost before the tumult was suppressed; but as my residence at Reading deprived me of the means of a personal knowledge of the transaction, it is enough for me to notice it, as one of those which shows the toleration of the vulgar heart, and the ideas it annexes to what it is pleased to term the blessings of liberty.

The constitution kept its ground in defiance of its adversaries; and as it is sometimes easier to make a pun than to avoid it, it may be said, that *The confederates of the Bar* were completely foiled in their undertaking. They came over by degrees; and it, at length, appeared, that the cobweb ties by which they had vainly flattered themselves they could pinion the love of interest, had only

benefited the least scrupulous of the confederates, who, like the stronger flies, had burst their flimsy fetters, and thence dashed at the treacle, unannoyed by competition.

All interdiction to practice being now removed, I found it necessary once more to open my law books. I obtained admittance as an attorney in the county of Berks, and was already employed to bring actions and defend them; but was soon drawn from this tract by the following incident.

Among a number of newly introduced maxims of republicanism, it was an highly favoured one in Pennsylvania, to bring justice home to every man's door. In the spirit of this principle, several new counties had been erected; and, in the year 1785, I had the good fortune, through the warm exertions of an influential friend, to obtain an appointment to the prothonotaryship of the county of Dauphin. By a combination of small circumstances working together for my advantage, I obtained, contrary to expectation, the suffrage of the supreme executive council, of which Mr Dickinson was then president. The republican party possessed a majority in the council; and Colonel Atlee, who belonged to it, was designated for the office. He was conspicuous as a party-man, and, if I mistake not, at the time, a member of the legislature; and, on the score of services and character, no one had better claims. But, upon this occasion, the negative character of my politics, contrary to the usual course of things, probably gave me the advantage. To keep out Atlee, the constitutionalists were disposed to give their votes to any one of his competitors. Of course, I had all their strength; and by adding to it two or three republican votes, I acquired a greater number than any

in nomination. As the mode was to vote for the candidates individually, there was no physical, or, perhaps, moral impediment, to each of them receiving the vote of every member. A promise to one was not broken by voting also for another, unless it was exclusively made. The President had, probably, given a promise to Colonel Atlee, as well as to myself; and considering me, perhaps, as too weak to endanger his success, thought he might safely gratify my friend, who pinned him to the vote, which, on coming to the box, he seemed half inclined to withhold. Or, where was his crime, if he really thought our pretensions equal, and therefore determined not to decide between us? Such were the accidents which procured my unlooked for appointment.

Mr Dickinson, for his want of decision, as it was called, was bitterly inveighed against by his party; and the next day at the coffeehouse, when receiving the congratulations of some of my acquaintance, Mr Michael Morgan O'Brien, who chanced to be present, and to whom I was then introduced, asserted it as a fact, that the President had suffered his hand to be seized and crammed into the box with a ticket for me; "but no matter," said he, "you are a clever fellow I am told, and I am glad that you have got the office." That this gentleman, who had been a short time among us, should have been so furious a partisan in our politics, can only be accounted for from his being perfectly in the O'Flaherty style, and consequently a ready champion of the cause of those he was in the habit of associating with. In the station of President, Mr Dickinson added not much to his reputation, in the opinion of either of the parties. By endeavouring to stand well with both, he unfortunately pleased neither. He had been brought in by the republicans;

and had soon after been virulently attacked by a writer under the signature of Valerius, who was no bad imitator of the manner of Junius. Against the charges that were urged against him, he made his own vindication, which, even by his political friends, was thought nerveless and whining. Upon the expiration of his term of service as President of Pennsylvania, he retired to Wilmington, in the State of Delaware, where he became a plain Quaker, in the principles of which sect, I think, he had been educated. But his Quakerism did not prevent his becoming President of this State, as he had before been of Pennsylvania. Neither did it, in his old age, so far withdraw him from worldly concerns, as to restrain his pen from again dipping in politics, during the progress of the French Revolution, with the sublime virtues and benign influences of which he appears to have been deeply and permanently smitten; insomuch, as to be rendered so acceptable to the Jeffersonians, as just before his death, which happened in the year 1808, to be held up by them as a candidate for a seat in the House of Representatives of the United States. While residing in the State of Delaware, he seems always to have been claimed by this class of politicians; and from his Fabius, which is a curious jumble of irreconcilable, abstract contradiction, and philanthropic inconsistency, he probably belonged to them. Like the rest of the sect, he is for devolving the whole virus of the Revolution on the shoulders of Robespierre, and his immediate colleagues; and but for a few unlucky *ifs*, he is persuaded all things would have gone well. The unfortunate Louis he loves with no less enthusiasm than he does the fanatic multitude, whose demoniac frenzy sent him to the scaffold; and he apostrophizes the manes of the dead mo-

march with as much solemnity and pathos, as if his blood had been a banquet to the federalists, who, it is true, are wholly lost to the morality, which would, with Fabius, transfer the gratitude which might have been due to the king, to those, who, though not actually his murderers, do yet exultingly trample upon his ashes.

Mr Dickinson was very far from a consistent politician. Though so little of a republican at the commencement of our revolution as to boggle at independence, he became so outrageous a one in the sequel, as to be an amateur of French liberty, and in respect of the parties in England, a Foxite* professed. To account for this, for certainly there is a glow of sentiment in his writings, which would promise better things, we must have recourse to some casualties in his public career. In the first place, then, from his supposed want of energy while in the first congress, Mr John Adams had, in a letter intercepted and published by the British, styled him "a piddling genius," and Mr Adams being afterwards President of the United States, and then thoroughly anti-gallican, might possibly have contributed to place Mr Dickinson in the opposite ranks. Probably, too, the

* Many, I am well aware, are partial to Mr Fox as a statesman. His abilities might have been very great, but he can hardly be called a candid, principled, and virtuous citizen. If, when he became minister, he pursued the same policy that Mr Pitt had done, it is evident that his opposition to him proceeded from factious and interested motives, under the influence of which, he acted the part of a wild and disorganizing Jacobin. He is said to have been a pleasing companion, and what is called a good natured man, which is generally, by the by, an unprincipled one. Refined virtue is indignant and somewhat austere. Estimating him, however, from his historical fragment of the reign of James II., one would suppose him to have been a humane, just, and generous man.

once celebrated Pennsylvania farmer, and writer of congressional addresses, was not altogether pleased at finding himself in the back ground, and eclipsed by statesmen of less standing than himself, the Hamiltons, the Ames's, &c. It is enough for those beneath the sphere of competition to exclaim :

> Let modest Forster, if he will, excel
> Ten metropolitans in preaching well.

In addition to this, liberty was the stock on which the farmer's celebrity was engrafted ; and lest the fine foliage might "grow into the yellow leaf," he was, perhaps, resolved to cherish, at all events, the vigour of the parent tree ; and hence, liberty, even to jacobinism, was among the toys of his dotage. This is the best I can say, for a teacher of political ethics, who (with whatever good intentions) for wisdom gives us folly ; for virtue, "deeds to make heaven weep, all earth amazed," under the idea of modelling the world according to a pretty theory.

The post I was honoured with fully satisfied my ambition ; it was sufficiently respectable, and in a few years wholly adequate to my wants. The duties it imposed I was pretty well acquainted with ; and I exerted myself to lay such a foundation in the office arrangements, as might support a regular superstructure. The trust committed to me was conscientiously attended to, and I venture to say, not negligently executed. My cares for a future competency, which were those alone which had disturbed me, were done away by my establishment ; a new town was rising under my eyes on the magnificent banks of the Susquehanna ; and though remote from the capital and obscure, I had little left to wish for ;—a state too tranquil to be lasting.

CHAPTER XIV.

Constitution of the United States—House of Representatives —Senate—Executive Power—Public Characters and state of Parties—Washington—Jefferson—French Revolution.

BEING now about to enter upon political discussions, I deem it due to those enthusiastically *republican* readers, who think we can never sufficiently praise ourselves, to tell them to stop here; if, from some unlucky notices I may have given, they have not already anticipated me. I am truly sorry that my convictions will not permit me to trace events in the usual strain of panegyric; but I am compelled, in the style of a grumbler, to say, that the patriotism, which had been calculated upon to bear us out with little or no aid from authority, and which, in the opinion of many, was still in full vigour, was, to the eyes of all sober men, wholly inadequate to the demands which were made upon it. It had the knack, indeed, of evading the most important of them, by representing them as spurious; and this was chiefly done, by restricting patriotic duties to the limits of a state. The country of a demagogue is the precise sphere of his influence; and making common cause on this principle, they were every where deaf as adders to the claims of a general interest. The articles of confederation, receiving cement from the sense of common danger, which prevailed during the war, had occasionally afforded faint marks

of continental impression; but as soon as the fear of subjugation was removed, they were no better than a rope of sand; and the general sovereignty was a very unequal match for the thirteen individual ones. The voice of the United States was, as it had been observed, but the drone of the bagpipes. Its buz was heard, but it contributed not at all to the modulation of the music. It could recommend, but not enforce a measure; and hence, the imposition of certain internal taxes, and a duty of five *per centum* on imported articles, essential to the discharge of the public debt and the fulfilment of a stipulation in the treaty of peace, could never be accomplished. The refractory states were not to be moved by considerations of national justice or character; and they were equally regardless of the consequences of a dissolution of the union.

To rescue the country from the impending anarchy and ruin, the influence of General Washington was called for, and again exerted for its salvation. Nothing less than the weight of his name could have induced the adoption of the new federal constitution, which had been framed under his auspices; and it had become very doubtful, whether the anxious struggle for independence had not been in vain, and the anticipated blessing of self-government would not be frustrated in its very dawn. The interests opposed to an efficient union of the states were truly formidable, as well from the conviction of the popular leaders that it would lessen, if not annihilate their importance, as from the too contracted notions of the people at large, and their inability to comprehend the necessity of a general controlling authority. The battle was hard fought on both sides. To the manly sense and patriotic eloquence of the one, was opposed the trite, but

seductive cant of sedition and faction. The refined and irresistible reasoning of Publius, the signature to a series of essays, chiefly written by Colonel Hamilton, was assailed by incessant vollies of words of dire import, such as monarchy, aristocracy, monopoly, and consolidation. But the last being the lucky hit, from which most immediate effect was anticipated, it was most unmercifully hackneyed in the service. The constitution was represented to be a consolidation, not a confederation of the states; and under this shrewd idea, its adversaries very ingeniously endeavoured to ward off the imputation of anti-federalism, now becoming odious. They contended that *they* were, in fact, the federalists, as the self-styled federalists were consolidators, aristocrats, and monarchists. Luckily, at this time, there were no French imperialists, or promoters of universal despotism; or, without doubt, they would have been these too. But the tribunitial arts of the *soi disantes* federal men were all in vain. Some dire infatuation, according to them, had seized upon the people, and to perdition they must go, since their best friends were no longer listened to. The grand processions of trades and occupations, which were exhibited at Boston, New York, and Philadelphia; the hint of which was, probably, taken from the shows of Tamerlane, at Samarcand, had completely federalized the populace of these capitals, and given an *eclat* to the business elsewhere, that could not be resisted. Under the "curses," therefore, "not loud but deep," of its enemies, the measure was sullenly acquiesced in, and the constitution gradually ratified by the states. By this event the *constitutional party* of Pennsylvania was laid at the feet of the *Republicans*, who, now triumphing un-

der the appellation of federalists, overwhelmed their adversaries with the short-lived odium of *anti-federalism*.

But the reputation of Washington, which had carried the new system, was no less necessary to give efficacy to its operations, than it had been to originate it, and obtain its ratification; and as he could not but be aware of this, he consented, from a sense of duty, but without a particle of that "sweet, reluctant, amorous delay," with which more etherial patriots sometimes yield to the wishes of the people, to be a candidate for the presidency. As the disapprovers of the constitution knew that their opposition to his election would be unavailing, they gave none, but contented themselves with taunts and dismal forebodings. General Washington was then elected; and I mention it as a proof of my decided conduct in the controversy, that my country did me the honour to appoint me one of his electors. Had not my persuasion of the pressing importance of the measure forbade my being passive, it would have been scarcely possible to have remained so. From an idea that those holding offices under the state, would feel it their interest to oppose a system which circumscribed the authority from which they derived them, and might, thence, disturb the enjoyment of them, or even render them nugatory, they were confidently appealed to by the anti-federalists, as the natural enemies of the constitution; while, on the other hand, persons who had been in the army were counted upon by the federalists as likely to promote a scheme, in which the late commander-in-chief had taken so warm a part. But I did not wait to be solicited by the parties, neither did I poise their relative strength, or listen, for a moment, to the narrow dictates of self-interest. I am happy in being able to say, that I

was an early, undisguised, ardent, active, and, in my sphere, conspicuous partisan of the constitution; of course, a mark for the vengeance of the professional wielders of the people, who felt the potency of their incantations most cruelly impaired by its adoption. Their discomfiture being complete, they made a virtue of necessity, and not long after, yielded with a tolerably good grace, to the call of a convention for altering the constitution of the state, so as to render it more conformable to that of the United States. They considered this, and wisely, as a mean of recovering their lost consequence; and exerting themselves at the elections for members of this convention, they contrived to take the field, with a force not very inferior to that of their adversaries.

This body has been considered respectable for abilities: and among the men of note who were delegated to it may be found the names of Mifflin, M'Kean, Wilson, Lewis, Ross, Addison, Sitgreaves, Pickering, Gallatin, Smilie, Findley, and Snyder. I had myself the equivocal honour of being *a yea and nay* member; but having been elected in the room of one who died, I did not take my seat until some progress had been made in the business. The point which had excited most interest, and was thence the subject of the warmest controversy, was now upon the carpet. This was the construction of the Senate, or Upper House (as it is sometimes called) of the legislature. A committee selected for the purpose had reported an outline of the constitution; and that part of the report which recommended the choosing of Senators, through the medium of electors, was under discussion. Mr Wilson took the lead in opposition to the report; Mr Lewis in support of it. It was urged

by the latter and his co-operators, that the Senate should be so constituted as to form a check upon the House of Representatives; and, as in the proposed mode of creating it, through the alembic of electors, it would be purged of the impurities of an immediate election by the people, the *desideratum* would be obtained:—that being chosen by a selected few, it was presumable it would be more wise, more respectable, and more composed of men of wealth, than if chosen by the multitude; and hence, it was inferred, that it would partake, in no inconsiderable degree, of the proper qualities of an Upper House —of an House of Lords, it might have been said, if the idea had been endurable. As to Mr Wilson's scheme (for he had moved a substitute) of choosing the Senators in the same manner as the Representatives, with the exception only of larger election districts, it was reprobated as doing away every purpose of a divided legislature —since that the persons, composing the two Houses, would be precisely of the same character, and too homogeneous to operate as correctives of each other; and that unless the elector-system should be adopted, the convention had been called in vain.

Wilson, in defence of his plan, was for resting the chance of the two bodies being sufficient checks upon each other, upon the circumstances of their different spheres of election; of their sitting in different chambers, which would produce, he contended, an *esprit du corps* in each; and their being chosen for different periods, the Representatives for one year, the Senators for four years. He moreover urged, that electors would open a door to unfair practice and intrigue; that the Senators should be as much favourites of the people as the Representatives,

and be inspired with equal confidence, by equally feeling themselves their choice.

As the debate seemed to turn upon the idea that this was a contest between the principles of democracy and aristocracy, and that great advantages would be gained to either that might prevail, a considerable degree of heat was engendered; and Wilson, hitherto deemed an aristocrat, a monarchist, and a despot, as all the federalists were, found his adherents, on this occasion, with a few exceptions, on the democratic or anti-federal side of the House. In the list of exceptions I was; but not so much from the arguments adduced, though appearing to me both ingenious and sound, as from my conviction of its being wholly immaterial, so far as a check was contemplated, whether the Senate was brought together through the intervention of electors or not; and I was, of course, adverse to a measure at once circuitous, useless, and unpopular. As it was my practice to commit my thoughts to paper upon questions which underwent discussion, I have the following note of this:—

"The desire of choosing Senators, through the medium of electors, is certainly founded on a fallacious idea: for admitting that a small number of dispassionate, sensible men, would make a better choice than the people at large, is it possible that the advocates for the measure can be so blinded by prejudice, as not to see, that it is not the most dispassionate and intelligent men that will be sought for as electors, but the most devoted tools of party; and that the prevailing party in the district will always make the Senator? To suppose the contrary, or that any one, when parties run high, (and when do they not?) would be voted for as an elector, merely from a reliance on his wisdom and integrity,

without a knowledge of his sentiments, is to suppose a political miracle, and to forget that ever party-spirit existed. Let it not be said, that the object is to get a good man of whatever party. This is contrary to all party-policy and practice, which, if it cannot succeed in procuring the election of its own members, prefers the weakest and most contemptible of the other side, as being less capable of doing mischief. The respectability of the Maryland Senate, which has been so often instanced in the debate, proves nothing to the purpose. If it is a respectable body and of superior wisdom to the other House, it is not because it is chosen by electors. It must be owing to the more enlightened persons who compose it, reserving themselves for it, and having sufficient interest with the people to secure their seats; which interest would be the same without the intervention of electors; and if the state of Maryland shall have a wiser and higher-toned Senate than Pennsylvania, it must be attributed to the more aristocratical state of society there, which furnishes them with more suitable materials, and gives the men of wealth and information a superior degree of influence."

Thus far the note, the observations in which seem fully justified by events. Let us consider the objects which regulate the choice of electors of a president and vice-president, and then say whether the senate would have been bettered by the elector scheme. I myself was once chosen an elector, but it was because my voice was known to be for Washington, not personally on my own account.

As another mean to improve the upper house, a proposition was brought forward by the friends to the elector plan, to apportion the senators by means of a ratio

compounded of wealth and numbers; the intention of which was to give greater security to property, by increasing the weight of the wealthy districts beyond what they would derive from population alone. After reprobating the idea of introducing so invidious and sordid a principle into the government, and remarking that it could not answer its purpose unless this increased representation was under the sole guidance of the rich, who are rarely oppressed by the poor; my note goes on to say:—"Whatever advantages may, for a time, be given to the poor by a state of turbulence and confusion, as soon as order is restored the predominance of wealth immediately returns. It seems unnecessary to protect local wealth. It is not probable that the local distinctions now prevailing will continue, but rather that wealthy individuals will make common cause." A scheme of the same kind, as this compound ratio, was adopted by the National Assembly of France; speaking of which, I find Mr Burke has this remark, with which part of mine exactly coincides. "If any favour," says he, "was meant to the rich, the privilege ought to have been conferred on the individual rich, or on some class formed of rich persons; because the contest between rich and poor is not a struggle between corporation and corporation, but a contest between men and men; a competition, not between districts, but between descriptions."

I aim at no triumph by these remarks, and am not so uncandid as not to own that, before being led to examine it, I was as much seduced by the plausibility of the elector scheme as any one. I was at first induced to oppose it in the case of the senate, in the view of applying it in the choice of a chief magistrate, under an idea

that it might at least have the wholesome effect of mitigating the fury of a general election in a matter of so great interest, by putting the object a little out of sight; but I now doubt whether it would be productive even of this good.

The animated discussions which had taken place in the convention, on the formation of the senate, had produced no inconsiderable degree of ill humour among the members of that body, and more especially, as is usual, among the losers. For my own part, I was considered by them as an apostate from my principles; as a deserter of the federal standard; and at tables, where I occasionally fell in with my federal acquaintance, was treated by them with much unpleasant coldness and neglect. As, however, I had acted honestly from the best lights my understanding afforded, I was not to be brow-beaten into a retraction of the sentiments I had uttered; and was as confident in my opinions as they could be in theirs; in which, I presume, I have been justified by events.

As to the executive power, the structure, as it now stands, appeared to have been reared before I became a member of the convention. It would seem that it had been agreed upon, and reported by a committee of nine members, who had been selected for the purpose of framing and methodizing the outlines of the constitution. At any rate, no essential opposition was made to this article, which, in my opinion, is the most exceptionable of any in the instrument. The following note contains the chief ground of my objection to it, viz. "When I consider the strong temptation to the courting of popular favour, held out by the governor's re-eligibility at the end of three years, I am induced to condemn the section, and to prefer electing him for a certain period, say

four, five, six, seven, or so many years as might be deemed safe and expedient; at the end of which term, either a perpetual or very long exclusion to take place: an exclusion long enough to wear out the influence required whilst in office, and to make a re-election a too remote and uncertain contingency to be worth improper sacrifices and compliances.* The rotation, founded on a short exclusion, appears to be inadequate to its object, and to have little other effect than to compel us to part with a chief magistrate, however patriotic his conduct, or pressing the exigence. To it, I would prefer an uninterrupted re-eligibility." This idea I communicated to several of the leading members of the convention, but do not recollect that any of them seemed much impressed with its importance. Mr Lewis, indeed, did not seem to think unfavourably of it; but had been so much hurt with losing the electors, that he seemed to despair of redeeming the loss by the substitution of any other good, and therefore declined attempting any alteration in the article: And having too little confidence in myself to undertake a change in it, without able support, I suffered it to pass without publicly testifying my disapprobation of it. What made the general acquiescence in it more remarkable was, that it was thought necessary to remedy the evil arising from the annual election of sheriffs, who, it was observed, were too intent on preserving the good will of their constituents to do their duty to effect, until their ultimate term of service was secured. Perhaps it was deemed a kind of profanation of the high

* I was not aware, until very lately, that General Lee uses precisely the same reasoning, in a letter dated July 29th, 1776, to Patrick Henry, jun. Governor of Virginia.

function of chief magistrate, to suppose that any considerations of this sort could warp the manly march of him who might have the honour to be invested with it. But, whatever force there may be in the foregoing sentiments, candour compels me to own that, at this moment, I am much less tenacious of them than I have been. Were the governor's the only station to be sought for, the reasoning might be conclusive; but there are so many other temptations to a man smitten with a love of the public coffers, of influence and power, that it amounts to much less than I once supposed. Indeed, the best, and perhaps only security, for a firm and upright administration is to be found in innate dignity of mind: And the more we contemplate the construction of a popular form of government, the more shall we be convinced that no checks are competent to master corruption, or supply the want of integrity; and that, after all the jargon about anti-republican tendencies, no tendency can be republican unless it be virtuous.

Next to the construction of the senate, the regulation of the press was the ground of most acrimony in the convention. Whether or not the truth should be received as a justification on prosecutions for libels divided its law characters. I was among the simple voters who thought that it ought; and although now absolved from my sin, by federal opinion, I was then subjected to the imputation of wild innovation and democracy. I could say a great deal more of what was done in this assembly, and produce a world of political reasoning, vastly edifying and profound; but enough, in all conscience, of the business of constitution making! Could we have made the people wise, moderate, disinterested, we should have laboured to some purpose; but, where they are under no

dominion but that of their selfish passions, hurrying them on to a goal, regardless of consequences, of what use are all the constitutions that have been made by the friends to liberty in America or France? They want an essential ingredient of all laws. They may be just in their sanctions, wise and honest in their injunctions, but where are their enforcing and prohibitory powers? As they are, I am sick of them. With all their seeming beauties they contain a latent flaw; and I am almost tempted to reject the flattering theory of our institutions, as Bajazet does the Paradise of Mahomet.

> Prophet, take notice, I disclaim thy paradise,
> Thy fragrant bowers and everlasting shades,
> Thou hast placed woman there, and all thy joys are tainted.

If woman spoils the one, so does selfish man the other.

The sitting of this assembly for new modelling the constitution had the effect that had been anticipated by the anti-federalists. It enabled them to discharge a great portion of the odium, with which they had been loaded by their recent discomfiture; and although they had been completely laid upon their backs, it was evident, that, from this position, they had already turned upon their sides, and were in a fair way of being very soon on top of their antagonists. Such are the advantages of a steady, undeviating, profligate pursuit of power, over a regard for the public good, desultorily exerted without concert or system! A panic terror of the power of the union under the new constitution prevailed in the convention; and some, who were not infected with it, acted as if they were, for the purpose of mortifying Wilson, who had spoiled their favourite scheme. The bugbear of *consolidation* stalked hideously among us, to the dis-

may of many federalists, no less than of the anti-federalists; and at no small expence of the cogitative powers, many ingenious devices were framed to resist his encroachments. A balance was anxiously sought where none could be obtained; for where two parties only fight, one must prove the strongest. By means of a third, indeed, the weaker adversary may be put upon a par with the stronger, as the House of Lords, in the British constitution, is supposed to hold the balance between the King and the Commons; or as either one of the three may do it between the other two. But with respect to any imagined hostility between the general government, and those of the particular states; if it exists, it must take its course, there seems to be no control. The former will be potent when administered by men who have no scruples in regard to means; but weak as the old confederation when in the hands of the principled and conscientious. The power of the country, under her existing establishments, will be wielded by the turbulent and most daring; and if these, by any chance, should be thrown from the greater wheel, they will immediately avail themselves of inherent jealousies to get possession of the smaller ones, by an unprincipled use of which they will still find means to keep the ascendant. When the federalists held the helm of the general government, there was an incessant jarring between that and the state authorities, then managed by their adversaries; and were the former as little restrained by a concern for the public good as the latter, they would have played the same game against Mr Jefferson and his sect; instead of which, since their accession to national rule, they have been suffered to proceed without the smallest annoyance, in a part in which they were obviously most vul-

nerable; and in which, if their own malignant, Catilinarian spirit had prevailed among the federalists, they would most assuredly have been assailed. Nor let it be said, that they had not this in their power, after the actual war measures of Governor Snyder against President Madison. If ever sincere men shall again acquire the stations they ought to possess, then again shall we be stunned by the brawlings of anti-federal discord. The edifying unity of democracy will no longer be marred by a division into schools, nor will the Binns and Duanes turn their arms upon each other.

The convention, it has been observed, was deemed respectable for ability; and, upon a comparison with the materials of our state legislatures, it no doubt was. It had a good many speakers in it; but, that an aptitude to prate is no conclusive evidence of sound judgment, is an observation as old at least as Sallust. The most able debaters in the body were Wilson and Lewis. Ross, Addison, Sitgreaves, and Gallatin, were comparatively young statesmen, though each of the three first acquitted himself handsomely; the last did not venture beyond an isolated observation. It was singular, by the bye, and honourable to the liberality of our country, to hear a French accent intermingling with our own on a question for framing a constitution for Pennsylvania. It was realizing the *nihil humani alienum puto* of Terence. May we never have reason to repent our extreme complacency to *human race oratory*, whether declaiming on man's equality, or the freedom of the seas! Wilson was truly great, but enthusiastically democratic. The symptoms of returning reason, evinced in the adoption of the federal constitution, had probably put him in good humour with the people, and made him more than ever in love

with "free and independent man." He drew, to be sure, a picture of a free citizen in the act of disposing of his suffrage, little answerable to the sad realities which are found upon an election ground. Royalty, with its most splendid regalia, was made to hide its diminished head. Nevertheless, it was a pretty fiction; and I will not deny, that I did not listen to it with perhaps somewhat more than a demi-conviction. *Ces pauvres Savoyards sont si bonnes gens!* as Jean Jacques says. And who could say less of the good souls of Pennsylvania?

There was something singular in Wilson's mode of arriving at his goal. It was different at least from that which I should have taken; and he appeared studious to avoid the beaten road. Still, he never failed to throw the strongest lights on his subject, and thence, rather to flash than elicit conviction, syllogistically. It has been said that he required preparation. At any rate, he produced greater orations than any other man I have heard; and I doubt much whether the ablest of those who sneer at his occasional simplicities and "brilliant conceits," would not have found him a truly formidable antagonist.

Mr Lewis furnishes an instance of what may be done by fortitude and perseverance in a pursuit to which the mind has a bias. With nothing more than the common attainments of a country school, he took the resolution to make himself a lawyer; and, quitting agricultural employments, he applied himself for a year or two to the acquisition of Latin; after which he commenced his jurisprudential studies in the office of Mr Nicholas Waln, then in the first practice in Philadelphia. His mind appeared to be wholly occupied by his business, and he gave every difficulty which occurred a thorough investigation. In a

word, his success was complete; and, from the first degree of eminence at the bar, he had been called upon to serve his country in the legislature, and now in the convention. He was not, however, with the sage of Monticello, for confining all virtue to the labouring orders, though, from his early habits in life, probably well acquainted with them. Well knowing, that the morality of a gentleman was at least upon a par with that of a tiller of the earth; that Don Quixote (supposed a natural character) had more honour, though less cunning, than his squire, (a natural character too;) and that city vices are amply matched by rustic rogueries; he seemed without a *chosen people*, and, upon this occasion, was the advocate of what was called the aristocracy. But, though keen and fertile in resources, he was, both from education and the bent of his studies, destitute of the comprehensive means possessed by Wilson, who was a Scotchman and a scholar, and had peculiarly devoted himself to the researches which afford materials for the construction of republican institutions, and which, in his hands, would have been absolutely perfect, but for one unlucky thing which seems to have eluded his calculations,—this was, that political data do not admit of mathematical results. Mr Pickering was not an idle member. His aims were honourable and patriotic as those he has since pursued; and his suggestions were the emanations of right reason and experience. General Mifflin sometimes spoke to questions of order, but nothing more; and as to Chief-Justice M'Kean, I shall only say, that his conduct gave no token of the zeal he not long afterwards displayed in the democratic career. But, as it is the people who make governors, *Eh! que faire Mons. Peltier?*—what the

deuce is an eager candidate to do? For, least of all men can he say, with Fontaine, in his tale of Joconde:

Ce n'est pas mon metier de cajoler personne.

As to those great accidental luminaries, Messrs Smilie and Findley, their conduct upon this occasion was truly in character, ever tremblingly alive to the *soveranity* of the people. Nor have their labours in the good cause been less exemplary than their zeal, since, if we except a slight eclipse of a few digits through the obtrusion of Washington with his federal constitution and federal excises, they have been constantly glaring, full-orbed, in the political firmament; and we are certainly indebted for their uninterrupted public services, from the commencement of our independence, to the present hour. Nor shall I risk lessening the merit of their perseverance, by inquiring how much of the public money they might have pocketed in all that time; or whether any other trade they could have turned their hands to would have proved equally productive. Let it no longer be said that the people are ungrateful, or that virtue in republics goes unrewarded.

If Washington has no tomb, he must somehow have displeased the people. He fought their battles, it is true; but, was he sufficiently tender of their pockets?—sufficiently obsequious to their sovereignty?—Did he tell them that he *loved them?*—No; but he presumed to differ from them in opinion, and give them advice, and freemen choose to think for themselves: Nor will they submit to admonition from the bench or the pulpit.

During the sitting of the convention, the direful revolution in France was in progress, and its proceedings

sometimes appealed to as guides for our conduct. Though hardly daring to blame, and less impressed than I ought to have been with the treatment of the clergy, I presume no one ever heard me praise; for there was folly enough to disgust before the appearance of crime; and I thought the nation was about to throw away the most amiable part of its character. I remember, one day, at the table of General Mifflin, at this time president of the state, when the Parisian courtesans were applauded for contributing their patriotic gifts, I ventured to call in question the immense merit of the proceeding. I was stared at by a pious clergyman for the shocking heterodoxy of my sentiments, and should probably have been drawn into an altercation, no less disagreeable than indiscreet, had not the General, in a friendly manner, pacified the parson, by whispering him in the ear, that I was perfectly well disposed, and only sporting an opinion. So overwhelming was the infatuation, so ominous the fanaticism, that even this godly personage had quite forgotten that incontinence was a sin. He "could have hugged the *wicked sluts*,—they pleased him."

Nearly about the time of this occurrence, I happened to be at Reading, where Burke's Reflections on the French Revolution, with Paine's Rights of Man, both of which had just come out, were the general topic of conversation. I had seen neither; and when they were given me to read, I was apprised of the delight I should receive from the perusal of Paine's pamphlet. As to Burke, I was told it was heavy and tedious, but that it was necessary to condemn myself to a wading through it first, for the sake of better understanding and relishing Paine's, which was in answer to it. I read them; but, to my great misfortune, and contrary to all expectation,

I became so firm an adherent to Burke, that his opponent made not the smallest impression. I have already made confessions which cautious men may start at. But this is worse than all. The stolen Ribbon of Rousseau was nothing to it; nor, although events have proved me right, is that of any consequence. Many other things have turned out right too; but that does not lessen the odium of their early advocates. It is the essence of sound civism to think with one's fellow-citizens; on no account to anticipate them; and I ought to have thought wrong, because it was the fashion. Republican morality, like republican other things, being made by general suffrage, will not always take the trouble to ferret truth from her well; and as it is manufactured *pro re nata*, on the spur of the occasion, it is liable, of course, to gentle fluctuations—but infinitely safer, by the bye, in practice, than that of the old school. I here speak from woeful experience.

Under the administration of President Washington, the prosperity of the country was advanced with a rapidity which exceeded the most sanguine expectation of the friends to the new system. It afforded a cheering example of what a republic is capable, whose councils are solely directed with a view to the general good; and if ever a portion of the human race was in that auspicious predicament, it was that composing the population of these United States. But what is the general prosperity to hearts that are torn by the furies of disappointed ambition or avarice? It is but as paradise to the foe of mankind, engendering a more deadly venom in the tortured soul, soothing itself with the dire imagery of Claudian's Alecto.

Siccine tranquillo prodaci sæcula cursu?
Sic fortunatas patiemur vivere gentes?
&c. &c.

Unfortunately, there was no proportion between the offices to be disposed of, and the persons who had been in expectancy. Nothing less than miraculous power could have so distributed the loaves and fishes, as to fill the immense multitude that hungered for them; and the dissatisfied only repined at a success, which, in giving happiness to the community, promised stability to the rulers whose labours had procured it, and, in so doing, seemed to ratify the blanks as well as prizes which had been drawn. In each of the States there were, no doubt, numerous malecontents; but they, probably, most abounded in Virginia and Pennsylvania. In the former, there was a number of aspirants for high office, who could illy brook, that while they in their closets, remote from the din of arms and clangour of trumpets, had been qualifying themselves for the great affairs of the new empire coming out ready-made to their hands, others, who had spent their youth in the unlettered business of the camp, should be preferred to employments they deemed exclusively due to their own superior attainments. Mr Jefferson and Mr Randolph had, indeed, been gratified with places, but there were others equally ardent for them, unprovided for; and other motives concurring, the native State of the President was, perhaps, the most refractory in the Union. The chagrin in Pennsylvania did not proceed from precisely the same causes. The discontented here had hardly looked for the flattering notice of the general government; but they felt, (I speak of them in the aggregate, with due latitude for honest exceptions,) that their intriguing parts would be

miserably circumscribed by the operation of the new system; and that on a theatre, where talents and character were the sole recommendation to office and consequence, their chance of influence was a very sorry one. Far different was it in the state government, in which they had been accustomed to shine and to dictate. There, a little learning would go a great way; and cunning was a quality of infinitely more advantage to the possessor than wisdom or true ability; and though the state authorities were still in force, they were no longer supreme, but subordinate. I am aware that this representation does not agree with the prevalent idea of our party dissensions. This recognizes, with very little discrimination, a lofty tone and aristocratical tendency on the part of the federalists; while, on that of their opponents, it discovers an ardent concern for the people's rights, somewhat more jealous, perhaps, than necessary, and an enthusiastic attachment to liberty, excessive indeed, but even amiable in its extravagance. That this enthusiasm or fanaticism had once existed, may be granted; but to admit that it prevails to any degree at present, would require a determination to believe in defiance of the clearest evidence to the contrary, since they who are or were supposed to have it are conspicuous for an overweening partiality for the most flagitious and desolating system of arbitrary rule, that was ever established to an equal extent upon mankind, without even being disguised by a mollifying appellation. My hypothesis, therefore, must absolutely exclude the love of liberty and equal rights, as a general feeling among the democrats of the day, not only now, but in time past. Whatever benevolent motives they might claim, it is perfectly fair to conclude, that they were actuated by a

headlong instinct of self-love; a blind infuriate impulse, prompting those possessed with it to remove, at whatever price, every obstacle to the consummation of their unhallowed purpose of rising upon the rubbish of widespread havoc and devastation. It is no objection to this supposition, that many of the democratical leaders had too much property themselves to favour such an object. They might not all have been aware of it; and those that were, no doubt, entertained the idea, that they could restrain their instruments when necessary; or even if they could not, that they should, at all events, escape unhurt in virtue of their fellowship. This is the unction, which, in these cases, is always laid to the soul: nor can it be supposed, that the Duke of Orleans thought his head in the smallest danger from those he had kindly helped by his vote, to the head of the king.

As to the great leader of the opposition, there is reason to believe he was head, heart, and hand in the noble project of renovating, by first destroying the world. *Tout detruire, oui tout detruire; puisque tout est recreer*, says Monsieur Robaud de St Etienne. He had been in France, and drank deep of her literature and philosophy. His official doings and messages show his utter contempt for *un vrai trivial, un clarté trop familière;* and that he was wholly of that school which teaches, as Mr Burke tells us, "that any good arising from religion or morality may be better supplied by a *civic education*, founded in a knowledge of the physical wants of men, progressively carried to an enlightened self-interest, which, when well understood, will identify with an interest more enlarged and public." Robespierre, to be sure, gave an unlucky illustration of this

fine doctrine in France. His enlightened self-interest gave him clearly to perceive, that, as he aspired to sovereign rule himself, so others did the same; and that, therefore, unless he sent them to their *eternal sleep*, they would do as much for him. But in America it has turned out better: and the enlightened self-interest which prompted Mr Jefferson to cast an eye upon the presidency, has most edifyingly identified with the interest of the *mouth of labour*, if not the whole, at least a very essential part of the public. This mouth of labour, by the bye, is one of the fine figures of speech, by means of which this gentleman has been enabled to triumph over the popularity even of Washington; although it is sacrilegiously thought by some, to savour a little of that jargon, which the same Mr Burke somewhat harshly denominates "the *patois* of fraud, the cant and gibberish of hypocrisy." But we, on this side of the water, ought to have more indulgence for a trade growing out of our institutions. As the people give power, and power pomotes thrift, the people may certainly be complimented a little: and hence, intolerance towards demagogues may fairly be ranked among the anti-republican tendencies. No censure, therefore, is aimed at one who is the quintessence of good republicanism, and too pure to take a stain though fondling with imperialism. For my own part, I am elated with the opportunity of recording my veneration for a patriot who has so rapidly advanced the morals of this new world, and whose scrupulous observance of truth pre-eminently entitles him to the motto of *vitam impendere vero*.

The French revolution then, from the attachment now shown by the Jeffersonians to the absolute despot-

ism that has been produced by it, it is fair to conclude, was less beloved by them for any philanthropic disposition it manifested, than from its being an engine wherewith to assail their adversaries in power; and it was so much the better adapted to this purpose as it was in conflict with Britain, that accursed island, which, in the opinion of all sound Jacobins, ought, long since, to have been sunk in the sea. To declare a neutrality, therefore, with respect to the belligerents, as was done by the administration, what was it but a base dereliction of the cause of republicanism—a most enormous act of ingratitude to those liberty-loving men who had benevolently taken off the head of Louis XVI. our late generous ally and "protector of the rights of man?" and who, by so doing, had made themselves the undoubted heirs of the immense debt of gratitude we had contracted with the murdered monarch? On the score of this gratitude transferred, can it ever be forgotten, what a racket was made with the citizen Genet? The most enthusiastic homage was too cold to welcome his arrival; and his being the first minister of the infant republic, "fruit of her throes and first born of her loves," was dwelt upon as a most endearing circumstance. What hugging and tugging! What addressing and caressing! What mountebanking and chaunting! with liberty-caps and the other wretched trumpery of *sans culotte* foolery! "Give me an ounce of civet, good apothecary, to sweeten my imagination!" In short, it was evident that the government was, if possible, to be forced from its neutrality; and that nothing less than a common cause with France, a war of extermination with England, and the other monarchies of Europe, would satisfy the men who are now so outrageously pacific as to divest themselves of the means

of annoyance and defence, and to place their glory in imitating the shrinking policy of a reptile. Fortunately for the nation, Washington was at the head of it; or the rage for universal republicanism, combining with the plea of gratitude derived from Jacobin morality, would have rivetted us in liege subjection to the imperial Napoleon.

CHAPTER XV.

Yellow Fever—Political Differences—Insurrection suppressed by the prudent Measures of the President—Treaty with Great Britain—Travels of the Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt—French Settlement at the Asylum—Opposition to the Measures of the President—Washington retires from Office.

SUCH was the state of parties in the summer of 1793, when the metropolis of Pennsylvania, then resounding with unhallowed orgies at the dismal butcheries in France, was visited with a calamity which had much the appearance of one of those inflictions which heaven sometimes sends to purify the heart. A disease that was soon recognized to be the pestilential yellow fever, carried off several persons early in the month of August; and gradually spreading in all directions, raged with the most fatal malignancy until the close of October. Those, whose property enabled them to do it, fled with precipitation from the city, which was supposed to have been deserted by half its inhabitants; but enough remained behind to swell the mortality to several thousands. The dismay was, if possible, increased by the disagreement of the physicians as to the mode of treating the disorder; and numbers who had exulted in the havoc of their kind, because belonging to a different class, feeling death to be a serious evil when brought

home to themselves, shrunk, appalled with abject terror at the dangers which surrounded them.

> To each his suff'rings: all are men,
> Condemn'd alike to groan,
> The tender for another's pain,
> Th' unfeeling for his own.

A general gloom pervaded the country; for although the ravages of the disease were yet confined to Philadelphia, it was not supposed they would remain within these limits, notwithstanding that every precaution which the most unfeeling vigilance could suggest was used to prevent the spreading of the pestilence. Measures were taken in almost every town and village to prohibit the entry of persons suspected of infection; and even fugitives from the seat of it, though in health, were regarded with a jealous eye. Some of the people of Harrisburgh were for following the example of their neighbours, though a malady not less fatal than that in Philadelphia was raging among themselves. But the difference was, that one was called a plague, the other but a simple fever. It is somewhat remarkable, that if the yellow fever is of foreign origin, as insisted upon by many, that a disease of a similar type should make its appearance at the same time on the banks of the Susquehanna, at the distance of an hundred miles. Shall we say that the state of the atmosphere which generated the one was favourable to the diffusion of the other? This, I believe, is the doctrine of those who contend that the yellow fever is of exotic growth, and always imported, when it appears among us. It would be highly presumptuous in me to undertake to decide, when "doctors disagree;" but, that a state of the air should be favourable and adequate to the diffusion,

but not to the origination of a contagion, is certainly refining somewhat nicely. I venture, however, no opinion upon the subject. With respect to the mortality produced by the two diseases, that at Harrisburgh was, I believe, in proportion to the population of the place, as great as that at Philadelphia. I cannot take upon me minutely to describe the symptoms of the Harrisburgh disease, nor were they the same in all that were sick, but a general one was, an affection of the stomach, or nausea, with violent retchings, and a yellowness of the skin. Some were ill a week, some longer, some died in two or three days from the time of their being seized, and others, who were walking about with symptoms only of the ague, suddenly took ill and expired. The black vomit, which has sometimes been supposed peculiar to the yellow fever, appeared in some cases. I was attacked with a quartan ague, about the middle of September; but had none of the grievous symptoms of the malignant fever which prevailed.

Whatever may be the points of discrimination between the bilious and yellow fever, the origination of the one seems to depend on the same cause which spreads the other; and this appears to be a torrid sun acting upon a moist soil, or upon impure and stagnant water. The matter which produces agues, and which, according to Dr Cullen, is miasmata alone, is, I take it, competent also to the generation of bilious fever in habits disposed to it; and if not to the generation, at least to the propagation or spreading of the yellow fever; wherefore, the vapours from low and marshy situations and waters, rendered baneful from certain adventitious circumstances, may be pronounced to be the support or aliment of all these diseases, more peculiarly of the latter, perhaps.

when the exhalations are rendered more than commonly noxious from the general state of the atmosphere. Egypt, Syria, and Turkey, are at once the seat of the plague, and of bilious and intermitting fevers.

But the deleterious effects of marsh effluvia in warm climates have, perhaps, been known from the earliest time. They are, at least, recognised by Silius Italicus, who wrote in the reign of Nero. Speaking of a pestilence which raged in the Roman army in the second Punic war, he ascribes it to the fervid rays of the sun, acting upon the stagnant and wide spread waters of the Cyane.

> Criniger astriferis Titan fervoribus auras
> Et patulam Cyanam, late palustribus undis
> Stagnantem, stygio Cocyti opplevit odore.

This cause existed at Harrisburgh. A mill-dam had been erected the season before on the Paxton, rather a turbid and sluggish stream, within five or six hundred yards of the middle of the town, on its eastern side. The obstruction must have spread the water over a surface of from eight to ten acres; and this, co-operating with a state of the atmosphere unusually morbid this season in such situations, may fully account for the fever which prevailed. In the fall of the year 1792, there were some cases of it, and still more in that of 1794, equally malignant; after which the mill-dam was removed. I have been the more particular on this subject, though without being able to offer any thing satisfactory, from knowing it to have been a matter of some interest with the physicians of Philadelphia, to ascertain the nature of the Harrisburgh disease; thence to deduce data towards the solution of the question, whether the yellow fever, as

appearing in our cities, be, or not, a malady of exclusively foreign origin.

The distress I saw around me; the dismal tidings from Philadelphia; and, above all, the frightful mania which had taken possession of a vast majority of my fellow-citizens, induced a dejection of mind I had never before experienced. I had been for some time labouring to stem the torrent of fanaticism among my townsmen; but to no other purpose than that of increasing their violence, and drawing down upon myself the denunciation of being inimical to liberty, and an unnatural partizan of England. It was in vain I urged that I was only treading in the steps of the President, whom all pretended to revere; that he had chosen for his country the path of neutrality, and that it was the duty of all good citizens to acquiesce in it, until it should be abandoned by those who were legally constituted to say, what should be the state of the nation in relation to the powers at war. The bringing of the name of Washington to my aid produced no sort of embarrassment among the maniacs for regeneration, who, in the same breath, extolled him to the skies, and denounced perdition on those who supported his policy. In fact, his name was constantly used to sanction the measures of his opponents; and even in the contest for the presidency between Mr Adams and Mr Jefferson, it is a matter of notoriety, that his dislike to the administration of the former was atrociously asserted in defiance of his letter announcing his acceptance of the command of the army, and unqualified approbation of the steps which had been taken. It has been said, that hell itself cannot be governed without some degree of truth; and, if so, for policy sake, at least, we ought not wholly to discard her. My indignation at this base dereliction of every

honourable and moral principle, conspiring with my firm conviction that my opinions were correct, made me an enthusiast in the cause I had espoused; and the feeble efforts of my pen were employed in vindicating the conduct of administration—in exposing the folly, the frenzy, the duplicity, and hideous wickedness of its adversaries. I derived an additional incentive to exertion, from the consideration, that the civilized world was so singularly circumstanced, that good men of every nation and country had a common cause to maintain; and that, in the threatened universal wreck, conditions were so confounded, that even the private American citizen might feel himself nearly on the same eminence with those great and truly enlightened European statesmen, who were labouring to avert the impending desolation: as in a vessel in danger of foundering, the navigator's skill is, at the moment, of no account; and the meanest hand on board may be engaged in stopping the leak, and plying the pump, to as much effect as the captain. But of what use are endeavours to fix the charge of swindling on a political adversary? He denies it, and retorts the accusation. Thus, with two-thirds of the people, who are incapable of investigating the truth, did they even think it worth their pains to do so, the parties, as to honesty, are left upon a level; and, hence, as the sovereign has no objection to being deceived, he will be deceived, and villany will be triumphant. Such has been, and will be, the common effect of appeals to Mr Jefferson's *Bar of Public Reason*, which, if the phrase be not intended as a sarcasm upon the tribunal, it must be meant as a cruel mockery of those who are interested in just decisions from it.

Among the abominations of this rage for French liber-

ty and fraternity, there has been, all along, an utter disregard of the most obvious dictates of justice, humanity, and consistency. In the beginning, the revolution must, at all events, go on: *ça ira* was the word, and no matter by what monsters the business was conducted. Power, for this reason, was always the criterion of right: and Robespierre, until his head was ascertained to be off, was no less popular with us than the best of his predecessors. And for what was this horrible sacrifice of every thing we had, heretofore, been taught to consider as virtuous and honest? To destroy kings and nobles, monarchy and aristocracy, and to make a huge republic of the world, wherein all men were to be equal: or if there should, peradventure, be a little temporary inequality, it should alone be founded on the uninvidious pre-eminence of intellectual acuteness in the acquisition of pelf or popular suffrage; sound titles, without question to superiority among men! Colonel Chartres, for instance, among the first, and names beginning with every letter of the alphabet among the latter. But since this great republic has not come, or since, at least, it has not come precisely in the form that was predicted, having clothed itself in imperial purple, instead of the plain homespun garb, in which it was expected to appear; and having, moreover, in the place of its former hosts of patriotic citizens and *citesses*, presented us with dukes and titled men innumerable, with its Abrantes, its Cadores, its Ponte Corvos, and Beneventos, what is the ground of our attachment, now, to the great nation? To restore the freedom of the seas, and destroy that Pandora's box of human ills, Great Britain. Wisely answered again, and shrewd and patriotic must be the men, who began and still maintain their claim to exclusive popularity and confi-

dence by two such admirable and solid systems of policy and ethics; and shrewder still that goodly portion of the people which shows itself capable of appreciating and rewarding such transcendent state ability! But I must not encroach on the province of the party editor.

As every circumstance was seized by the discontented to embarrass the administration, or, in the proverbial phrase, "to stop the wheels of government," a handle was made of the excise law. A duty being laid upon whisky, that general and favourite beverage in Pennsylvania, it was found a potent theme for the purpose of sedition; and it was accordingly preached upon with so much unction, that an insurrection was the consequence. It began beyond the mountains in the summer of 1794, spreading from west to east with wonderful rapidity. Harrisburgh was quickly infected; and a meeting had been called for the purpose of passing some inflammatory resolutions. By the persuasion, however, of a few of us, who were untouched by the contagion, these inconsiderate men were induced to desist; though less, perhaps, from a sense of their error, than from our assurance that a body of troops were on their march to the seat of insurrection; and that, if they persisted in their undertaking, they would involve themselves in the guilt of a forcible opposition to the laws, and most surely have cause to repent of their temerity. It is difficult to say what might have been the issue of this commotion, had not the President taken immediate measures for its suppression, and called out a force so respectable, as at once to overawe the seditious, and thereby prevent the effusion of blood. The insurgents who had once assembled at Parkinson's Ferry had proposed another meeting at Braddock's Field; a location, without doubt, adopted *in*

terrorem, and by way of hint to the effeminate federalists, what a set of bloody-minded fellows they had to deal with. But the device, however well conceived, was wholly lost upon General Washington, who had seen all sorts of folks in his campaigning, and knew that men with "mockissons", and leggings, and hunting-shirts, and tomahawks, and rifles, were just about as brave as men with powdered heads and silk stockings, and no braver; and that their standing on Braddock's Field, (tremendous spot, to be sure!) would not make them a jot more ready to leave their carcasses to bleach there among bones that had been whitening by a forty years exposure. At any rate, these formidable circumstances did not prevent his putting himself in a posture to bring this lawless assemblage to reason; and what was equally unlucky for them was, there being at his disposal a number of persons who had also seen service, and, therefore, as little liable as himself to be dismayed by hideous grimaces. To cut a well known story short, there was no fighting after all; it being thought best by the insurgents, on serious deliberation, to send ambassadors to sue for peace, one of whom, if I mistake not, was the veteran statesman Mr Findley, a man so minutely acquainted with the whole business, as to have been enabled to write a book upon it nearly as thick as a well-sized cheese; and in which, I am told, for I have never read it, he belabours General Hamilton most unmercifully. Washington, as already observed, was still too popular for a direct attack. Whenever, therefore, he was spoken of, it was with the warmest professions of veneration for his virtues and good intentions—thus complimenting his heart at the expence of his head, and representing him as a good, easy simpleton, who, not very well aware of

the tendency of his measures, was continually led into scrapes by the cunning rogues who surrounded him, the archest of whom, at this time, was Hamilton. How exhilarating to wounded patriotism, thus, by a stroke of the pen, to sink into a fool and a knave, these two great champions of federalism!

The Western Expedition, as it was called, gave me an opportunity of seeing a number of my old friends from Philadelphia; and it afforded also a momentary triumph to the poor handful of Harrisburgh federalists, who were stated by their opponents to amount to only five. A French flag, which had been flying at the court-house, then building, had been the cause of some squibbing in the newspaper; and this flag was peremptorily ordered to be taken down by the troops from the city. Had I been disposed for revenge, I might, upon this occasion, have been fully gratified, as I was repeatedly asked who had caused it to be put up, and impliedly censured for giving evasive answers to the questions; which, from their manner, evinced a disposition to treat the authors of it much more roughly than would have been agreeable to me.

Conspicuous among the crowd that rolled on from the eastward was Governor Mifflin, who had been vibrating with much address between the parties; and had really the merit of keeping them in tolerable humour, within the sphere of his influence, that is, within the limits of the state.

> Such in the midst the parting Isthmus lies,
> While swelling seas on either side arise.

He had a large suite, which, as it consisted of gentlemen of both parties, he was tugged a good deal in opposite

directions; though, on this occasion, his leaning was decidedly federal, and being so, he did me the honour to accept of a bed at my house, instead of one at General Hanna's, which he had in his offer. I have no doubt, however, that his head and heart were generally right, maugre a conduct often wrong; and though I am as little addicted as any one to compromise between my conscience and an opposing interest, and, of course, not at all disposed to apologize for his temporizing, I cannot but admit, that Mifflin was a pleasing man, and one to whom I was indebted for many acts of kindness. But popularity and the bustle of public life were hobby-horses he could not dispense with. He must mount them, therefore, though at something more than a risk of being spattered by the dirt which they raised.

On the day after his arrival he convened the people at the market house, and gave them an animated harangue, in which there was nothing exceptionable save a monstrous suggestion, that the British had stirred up the discontents to the westward, and been the cause of the present opposition to government. I wonder if Mr Smilie, Mr Gallatin, and the rest of them, were aware that they were but the puppets of this abominable nation!

In a few days after the Governor, General Washington, accompanied by Colonel Hamilton, came on. After waiting on them, I prevailed upon the burgesses to present an address to the President, which I sketched out, and which, from the cordiality of the answer, appeared to have been well received. But as they have both been published, it is unnecessary to insert them here.

As to myself, I could not partake of the glory of this expedition. An ague which had hung about me, ever

since the preceding fall, had rendered me unfit for service. Nevertheless, I procured a substitute, in preference to claiming an exemption on account of my debility.

That this commotion in its infancy was highly pleasing to the opposition leaders, can hardly be doubted; and that it was cherished also by the French minister as a favourable circumstance towards the predominance of the Gallic interest, is fairly to be inferred from his notice of our "early decrepitude," and his intimation, that for some thousands of dollars, he could have plunged us into a civil war. But I think he was mistaken here, as the intriguers were neither fighting men, nor disposed for absolute anarchy: yet from his assertion of what he might have done by means of cash, it is a matter of obvious deduction, unless Mr Fouchet was a liar, that he had an understanding on the subject with the master-democrats, who, by way of apology, as I take it, for not driving on the insurrection with more spirit, had pleaded their want of pecuniary means. Some of them, indeed, might have been willing to touch the dollars, had the Frenchman been fool enough to bring them forth; but, even in that case, he would have been over-reached, and got nothing for his money.

One more stand was made against the popularity of the President. The occasion was found in the treaty with Britain, negotiated by Mr Jay. This was to have been expected; as a heavy clamour was raised at the time of his appointment to the mission, upon grounds it would be both tedious and unnecessary to go over. The treaty, after much deliberation, had been ratified in the constitutional mode; but as it depended on the House of Representatives to make the appropriations necessary

for carrying it into effect, it was here attempted to be defeated by withholding them. Mr Jay was as much vilified, as if he had laid the entire interests of his country at the feet of a foreign power; for such things were then justly considered as crimes. But shall the treaty go into effect? This was the question in the House of Representatives, and it was debated for weeks upon every point but the one really in issue, namely, whether any treaty, whatever might be its stipulations or advantages, was admissible with Great Britain; and whether the anti-federal party, should it relinquish the vital nourishment it derived from a deadly, implacable, and everlasting enmity to this accursed island, would be able to sustain itself, or have a chance of ever rising again? These were the merits of the cause, though cautiously kept out of view. The treaty, however, stood its ground; and the sole consolation of the defeated faction was to wait, with what patience it might, for the death or resignation (to borrow its own phraseology) of the "first and greatest of revolutionary patriots." Before dismissing the topic, it may be remarked, that the ground upon which the treaty was most strenuously assailed was, that it imposed some slight restrictions upon our trade. Yes —this was a ground taken by the very candid and impartial men, who now advocate non-intercourse laws and perpetual embargoes, rather than expose themselves to a collision with the other belligerent nation.

In the spring or summer of 1795, a letter was delivered by a gentleman at my house, which gave me the opportunity of a transient acquaintance with the Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt, who, being on a tour to see the country, was recommended to my attentions.

My respect for the writer of the letter would have induced me to avail myself of the honour it offered me; but, being indisposed and depressed by a domestic affliction, I did not go out, and thus escaped the scrutinizing eye of the illustrious traveller. It is certainly a perilous thing to stand before a man about to make a book, and who gauges and proves you with a view to making your quantities and qualities a component part of his subject matter. General Hanna, it appears, had been in this predicament; and, all things considered, he comes off very well. His age, I must say, was pretty accurately guessed at by the duke, who is also correct in his other observation, that the general preferred chewing to smoking tobacco. Were I about framing an hypothesis why Mr Hanna makes a somewhat better figure in the tour than the gentlemen of Reading, in spite of their acknowledged hospitality and "obliging answers to inquiries," I should say that he talked European politics with rather more understanding than they did, little, as the duke tells us, they are at best understood in America. Those talked in Reading, probably, were not entirely to the taste of a good Frenchman, who, if I understand the character that phrase would designate, would cry, *Vive le nation et sa gloire*, not only in exile, but with his neck under the guillotine. Now, though the Reading gentlemen spoke with just abhorrence of the crimes of the Revolution, and with due respect of the Marquis de la Fayette, they might neither have testified a desire that England should be brought to the feet of France, nor that the destinies of the world should be subjected to her control, things which, from his party-leanings, Mr Hanna might have countenanced. All this, however, is but

conjecture; and as to the accuracy of the noble tourist's facts, so far as I am acquainted with them, I have nothing to object, except as to the havoc of names.

From this gentleman I turn to others of his nation whom he speaks of in his travels; and for whose acquaintance I was indebted to Major Adam Hoops, who, I should have mentioned before, did me the honour to attach himself to my company, in the capacity of a volunteer, during part of the campaign of 1776. A letter from him about the year 1790 or 1791, so far as my recollection serves, introduced me to Mr Talon, then engaged with the Viscount De Noailles, in establishing a settlement on the North Branch of the Susquehanna, and to which they gave the name of Asylum. In the course of this business, he several times passed through Harrisburgh, and never failed, on these occasions, giving me an opportunity of seeing him. Mr Talon fully justified, to my conception, the favourable idea that is given by Lord Chesterfield and others of a Frenchman of rank. I have seldom seen a gentleman with whose manners I was more pleased. Though he spoke but little English, and I less French, yet, from the knowledge we respectively had of each other's language, we contrived to make ourselves mutually understood. On one of his visits to Harrisburgh he was attended by not less than ten or a dozen gentlemen, all adventurers in the new establishment, from which they had just returned on their way to Philadelphia. Of these, I only recollect the names of M. De Blacons, Captain Keating, and Captain Boileau. My brother and myself, who had waited on them at their inn, were kept to supper, and I have rarely passed a more agreeable evening. The refreshment of a good meal, coffee, and wine, had put in

motion the national vivacity; and the conversation, carried on in English, which many of the company spoke very well, was highly animated. Captain Keating was, in fact, an Irishman, and Captain Boileau had been among the troops which had served in this country. As to M. Blacons, he was but a novice in the language; yet, hurried away by a high flow of spirits, he ventured so boldly in it, in expatiating to me on a projected road from Asylum to Philadelphia, which, according to him, required nothing but the consent of the legislature, to be completed out of hand, that Talon, astonished at his volubility, exclaimed, *Ce n'est pas lui, c'est le vin que parle*, "That it certainly was not he, but the wine, that was talking." The French Revolution being touched upon, it came into my head to ask Captain Boileau how it happened, that he, and the other gentlemen who had been in America, and who must, of course, have been among the foremost in inculcating the doctrine of liberty in France, were now so entirely in the back ground? His answer was interrupted by a loud and general laugh; and Talon, who had probably been adverse to the Revolution in all its stages and modifications, (as he was the person, on account of whose courteous reception General Washington had been roundly taken to task by the citizen Genet,) enjoyed the thing so much, that he thought it worthy of remembering, and put me in mind of it in an interview with him a long time afterwards. This gentleman had apparently stood high in the confidence of the king, as, on once dining with him at his lodgings, he, at the instance of a French lady from St Domingo, who was present, and had observed that I was uninfected with the regicide mania, showed me his picture on the lid of a box studded with diamonds, that had

been presented to him by his majesty, as the inscription imported.

The Duke de la Rochefoucault gives some particulars of the Asylum settlement, humorously called by some of the settlers, *refugium peccatorum*, and enumerates the families which had established themselves there, many of whom, from their names, I remember to have seen; but I have understood that the settlement is now entirely abandoned by the French, and I have been told by persons who have seen the tract, that one more rugged and mountainous, except the particular spot whereon the town stands, could hardly be found. In this it agrees with Mr Talon's account of it, who, upon my asking him as to its situation, said the mountains were *trop rapproches*, thereby conveying the idea of a narrow strip of flat land along the river. The affairs of France were a subject not often touched upon by Mr Talon; but it was impossible not sometimes to advert to them, and he testified much concern for the death of the murdered Malesherbes, who, if I mistake not, was one of the counsel for the king. He spoke of him as a noble generous man—*un gallant homme* was, I recollect, one of his expressions. Talon was understood to have been in the law-line himself, and to have been *Avocat General* under the old regime. If this was the fact, the office was, apparently, through royal favour, hereditary in his family, as one of the same name in that office is spoken of by Cardinal de Retz in the following very honourable manner, and the more so from his being in the opposite party, and a foe to his seditious designs. "Talon, advocate-general, made one of the finest speeches that was ever made on a like subject. I never heard or read any thing more eloquent. He mixed with his reasons

whatever could serve to make them the more moving. He invoked the manes of Henry the Great, and, kneeling down, he called upon St Louis to protect the kingdom of France. You fancy, perhaps, that you had laughed at this spectacle; but it had moved you as it did the whole company, upon whom it worked in such a manner that the clamours of the inquests began, as I perceived, to decrease by it." Though this quotation may be thought a strange wandering from my purpose, inasmuch as it mingles the transactions of ages past with those of the present, I could not suppress it, since it places in so amiable a light the virtue of patriotism, and the irresistible eloquence which may flow from that source. We, too, have our sainted friend in Heaven, who, by a stretch of fiction more warrantable, may be supposed to be watching over the destinies of this country; but much, I question, whether an equally solemn invocation to his manes would find matter so soft as was found in the breast of this Catiline, and in the hearts of those who were set in motion by his machinations.

To return to our own affairs. Although no other specific ground of opposition, than those already mentioned, was taken against the President, yet the whole tenor of his administration was bitterly and incessantly inveighed against as hostile to liberty. The logic of democracy was extremely compendious, and, therefore, the more satisfactory to superficial inquirers. On the one hand, it pointed to *republican* France; on the other, to a combination of despots—and this was enough. In so interesting a struggle, could any friend to his kind be neutral! And the inference was, that they who were not for France were against her, and monarchists, tories, and tyrants, of course. The name of England,

too, was well calculated to rouse old resentments; and the single circumstance of her being opposed to France was quite sufficient to make all staunch, Bœotian Whigs, allies of the latter. Was she not, it was asked, engaged in a cause exactly similar to our own—and shall we side with royalists against her? Shall we not rather, in the glowing language of Genet, march to combat under her banners, and repay her for the generous assistance she gave us in our contest? Such arguments struck the public sensory with force; and the impression they made was not to be effaced by any reasoning more complex and refined. Besides, who listens to reasoning that runs counter to his passions, his prejudices, and his interests? One, perhaps, in a thousand. It now became evident, that, to be popular, or even tolerated, it was necessary to be a partisan of the French; as to doubt merely the holiness of their cause, was the certain road to odium and proscription. It is not at all to be wondered at, therefore, that the prudent, the timid, and the thrifty, all lent themselves to democracy, and helped to swell a tide which seemed ready to rise above all mounds, and to bear down every thing before it, even to the weight and popularity of Washington. That good man now began to doubt whether the prize of independence, which had cost him so many anxious days and sleepless nights, were really worth the sacrifices which he had made for it; and whether posterity might not have cause to question the value of his services, or, even under the smart of anarchy, to exclaim—"Curse on his virtues, they have undone his country!" Weary of the struggle "with vice and faction," he at length resolved, at the expiration of his second term of service, to retire from the presidency, and leave it to be scuffled for between Mr Adams and Mr Jefferson.

Never had the soul of Washington exhibited more illustrious proofs of true nobility, than in that very part of his life which excited the most viperous malignity, and brought upon him the execrable charge of having legalized corruption. Though always great—though in his early manhood distinguished as the protector of his country from savage inroad and depredation—though the only man perhaps in America who, by a transcendently virtuous, prudent, dignified, and persevering, deportment, could have kept us united, and carried us triumphantly through the revolution—he never appeared to more advantage than during the arduous season of his eight years presidency. Like the magnanimity displayed by Cato in his march through Syrtes and Libyan deserts, it might justly be preferred to the most brilliant military achievements.

Hunc ego per Syrteis Libyesque extrema triumphum
Ducere maluirim, quam ter Capitolia curru
Scandere Pompeii, quam frangere colla Jugurthæ.

Contrasting the glorious height to which he carried the American name with its present lamentable degradation; the prosperity to which he raised his country with its present wretched state of despondency and subserviency to a foreign and despotic power; are we not fully justified in applying to him the "fine rapture" of Lucan in regard to the patriot of Rome?

Ecce parens verus patriæ, dignissimus aris
Roma tuis!

His country's father here, O Rome, behold,
Worthy thy temples, priests, and shrines of gold!
If e'er thou break thy lordly master's chain—
If liberty be e'er restor'd again,
Him shalt thou place in thy divine abodes,
Swear by his holy name, and rank him with thy gods.

CHAPTER XVI.

Mr Adams President—Opposition to his Administration—French Partisans—Imposition of Taxes—Insurrection—Federalists lose their ground—Death of General Washington, and Election of Mr Jefferson—Character of that Gentleman—Reflections—Death of the Author's Mother—Conclusion.

In the contest for the presidency Mr Adams prevailed by a very small majority. Hence, federalism was still ascendant in the National Councils, though considerably depressed in those of some of the states which were working by sap, while their myrmidons abroad displayed as much ardour to storm the strong hold of aristocracy, as the Parisians had done to demolish the Bastile. The tone given by Washington was maintained by his successor. Equally federal, he spoke a language more lofty; and in his answers to the numerous addresses which were presented to him on occasion of the insolence of the French Directory he was thought egregiously heterodox; particularly in one in which he somewhat unnecessarily, indeed, takes occasion to speak of his having once had the honour to stand in the presence of the Majesty of Britain. Shocking sounds, to be sure, to the republican ears of the day!—though now we can talk of the Imperial Majesty of France without the smallest danger of setting our teeth on edge, or of

being proscribed for incivism. Nay, we even permit a democratic editor to live, who, not long since, proposed to turn our republican president into a monarch, and to invest his temples with a diadem.

But I must hasten through the stormy scene of Mr Adams's administration. The *republicans*, as they now styled themselves, (for nothing is more conducive to a successful cajolery of the people than a well chosen appellation,) having got rid of Washington, continued their efforts for the ascendancy with inereased hopes and animation. They were no longer the enemies, but the friends and watchful guardians of that constitution they had so lately deprecated as the greatest evil that could befal them; or, to use the words of citizen Fouchet, they had "disembarrassed themselves of the insignificant denomination of anti-federalists, and taken that of patriots and republicans." This was, doubtless, an able *manœuvre*. They got possession, by it, of a popular name, and their next care was to show how well they deserved it. An occasion soon occurred for a display of their new patriotism and republicanism. This was the arrogant and swindling conduct of the Directory already mentioned. Their demand of tribute, and threat, in case of non-compliance, to barter us away as they had done Venice, being properly felt, and resented by the sound part of the community, addresses to the President were poured in from every part of the union, expressive of a sense of the outrage received, and a determination to support the government in any measures of defence which the crisis might demand. The Directory did, unquestionably, make a sad blunder here, and might have ruined their cause if any thing could have ruined it. Instead of playing to the hands of their partners on this

side the water, they forced them most unmercifully, by leading a suit they could not follow, but were absolutely obliged to ruff. Nevertheless, the awkward thrust was parried with admirable dexterity; and joining a cry they could not silence, they came forward with their addresses too, breathing a most ardent zeal for the honour of their country, and a vehement indignation at the affront which had been offered it. To take off a little, however, from the odium incurred by the Directory, under whose auspices they fought and machinated, they fell upon the extraordinary expedient of sending an extraordinary envoy, on their own account, to France, and the extraordinary personage selected for this service was Dr Logan. He was held out, at least, as the party's messenger. It appears to be in the essence of Jacobinism, as observed by Mr Burke, to excite contempt and laughter no less than horror and tears; in the words of a French writer, *on ne peut s'empecher d'en pleurer, et d'en rire.* In France, its *vis comica* was illustrated in dubbing the ruthless Duke of Orleans, Monsieur Egalité; and in America it exemplified itself in dubbing Dr Logan an ambassador of the people: and it was even attempted, in abject apery of the fantastic tricks of the great *Alma mater*, at Paris, to bring the Doctor's wife upon the stage in the manner of Roland's and Tallien's. It is perfectly in my recollection, that some of the democratic prints of the day spoke of Logan and Deborah in the style of Louvet and his Ladouiskie. The object of the Doctor's mission, or going, (if not sent,) was twofold; first, to assure the Directory that they had yet a strong party in America, which, if properly cherished and co-operated with, would soon be predominant and enabled to repay their assistance with interest; and

second, to show the people of this country, that the Directory had no quarrel with them, but merely with their rulers; and thence holding out an inducement to change them. What a blessed picture of republicanism was here! and, to give its figures full relief, the proper light to set them off, it should be observed, that the persons exhibiting it had engrossed the commodity and possessed it exclusively. By the fundamental principles of the constitution, and, indeed, of all elective systems, to certain persons is delegated the power to govern: if they misuse the trust, they are removeable by the votes of the people, and others put in their places; but failing to accomplish this, the wheels of government were to be stopped, and its functions to be usurped by any that might choose to do it: Can a clearer definition be given of anarchy? What lover of state juggling but must be charmed with the series of able tricking, by which the virtuous Jeffersonians crawled into power? As Dr Logan has lately been to England with the same pacific views (he tells us) with which he went to France, I shall not contest his motives in either case. Still, the use that was made of his voyage to France, by the party devoted to her, is a circumstance too important to be omitted in a recognition of the devices of the faction.

It was to have been expected that the unexampled profligacy and insolence of the ruling power, in France, would have considerably depressed their democratic adherents in America, and strengthened the federalists in the same proportion; but the consequences were directly the reverse. Alarmed much more than necessary at the menace of the Directory, and relying more upon the addresses from the people than a considerate attention to their sentiments would warrant; (as,

although they all expressed a warm regard for the honour of the country, they, for the most part, drivelled about the unkindness of the *dear* sister republic,) the administration and its friends in Congress seemed to think, that they were assured of the public support, in any measures against France, however energetic they might be. In this persuasion, such as deemed a state of hostility preferable to a state of fraternity with her, probably thought the occasion too favourable to be suffered to pass away; and, in this view, an attitude unequivocally hostile was taken by the government. A provisional army was voted, volunteer corps invited, ships of war equipped, and as a part of the system of defence, against a foe which was well known to have numerous partizans among us, the *alien* and *sedition* laws were enacted. But the most volcanic ground of all was yet to be trodden. Money was to be raised, and not a little would suffice. The ordinary revenues were insufficient; and the adherents of the foreign power already exulted in the anticipated ruin of their adversaries, who vainly flattered themselves with a public confidence which could not be shaken. With less ability the intriguers had vastly more cunning than the federalists; and from their better acquaintance of the human heart in its selfishness and littlenesses, they well knew, that a direct and sensible application to the pocket would be more likely to blow up the prevailing party than any thing else. It has been well said, that a disorderly people will suffer a *robbery* with more patience than an *impost*. Under this conviction, the patriots had long sickened at perceiving that the community was satisfied; and that the current expences of government were so easily raised. This was truly provoking. They wished

the people to feel, they said. It was not right that they should pay without knowing it; and hence, a furious and persevering clamour against indirect taxation. It was reprobated as hateful and anti-republican in the extreme; it was not to be endured; and, inasmuch as it aimed at deceiving the people, (wicked thing!) by cheating them into contributions, which their love of country would always most cheerfully afford, when necessary, it was represented to be unworthy of freemen; and to imply a suspicion both of the virtue and understanding of the community, which, about the same time, was voted by the democratic part of Congress, to be the most enlightened on the globe, France herself scarcely excepted. All this was vastly fine and highly pleasing, no doubt, to the galleries; a charming material, too, for the *republican* editors to cook up a most savoury dish for their customers. The simple, well-meaning federalists, were, in their turn, pleased also at finding that their opponents were smoothing the way to a measure, that, in the present conjuncture, would be exceedingly eligible for them; and, therefore, with no small degree of self-complacency for their supposed address, took the tricksters at their word, and passed a law for a direct tax. Its operation was on houses and lands; but still keeping in view the policy of favouring the industrious and frugal at the expence of the luxurious, the farmer paid very little for his property in proportion to the idle gentleman or inhabitant of a city, who gratified himself in the enjoyment of a sumptuous house. In the same spirit, a tax had been laid upon carriages kept for comfort and pleasure; an article which, beyond all others, made manifest the discrimination in behalf of *the mouth of labour*. Nevertheless, it was the mouth, that, from

the hollow, pretended solicitude of its parasites, that it might not be "deprived of the bread that it earned," was brought to clamour the loudest against taxes which did not affect it, and had, in fact, a tendency to relieve it; another proof of the inconsiderateness of the multitude, and of the superior potency of words to things, and, consequently, of the very little chance, indeed, of honesty and fair dealing in a contest with knavery and hypocrisy, before "the bar of public reason."

This tax on real property was the fatal blow to federalism in Pennsylvania. The stamp act was indeed bad enough, because it was a stamp act that first excited our displeasure with the mother country: The very name of an excise was hateful to freemen.* The alien law set at nought one of the inherent rights of man, that is, the right of *impatriation* and *expatriation*, of coming, and going, and saying, and doing, whatever the love of liberty prompted; and the sedition law was still more execrable, since, in permitting the truth to be given in evidence in exculpation of a libeller, it gagged the mouths alone of patriotic liars and calumniators, the only species of partizans whose labours could be efficient in a cause, emphatically that of falsehood. But, though all these sad doings had been carefully impressed upon the sensory of the great Germanic body of Pennsylvania, they had not fully wrought the desired effect. Their pockets had hitherto been spared, and wheat had borne a good price. But now their vulnerable part was touched, and they be-

* It is remarkable, that the federalists seemed really to believe, what, it was evident from the conduct of their opponents, they did not believe, viz. that the people were enlightened. They were persuaded, however, of the efficacy of flattery, and laid it on thickly.

gan to look about them. Nor were there wanting "friends of the people," to sympathize in their oppression, and to put them in mind, that it was to avoid the payment of taxes we went to war with Great Britain; that the federalists, therefore, were as tyrannical as she had been, and that this tax upon farms, houses, and *windows*, was but the beginning of a system which would soon extend to every thing; and that we should have at length a tax upon horses, waggons, and ploughs; or, as it was expressed in a handbill, circulated in favour of the election of Thomas M'Kean, "a horse tax, a cart tax, a plough tax, &c. &c." The love of pelf was completely roused; and many an honest farmer came to the poll with a countenance of as much anxious determination, as if upon his vote the question was suspended, whether he was to remain the independent man he was, or to sink into a pennyless vassal. Nor is it to be wondered at, that he was thus "perplexed in the extreme," when it is considered, that, although we never bribe, all offices were afloat, and depended for their resettlement on the issue of the election and the will of the successful candidate.

The success of a good trick is only a theme for mirth among those who have talents for the business of electioneering. Low cunning, indeed, such as is moulded into the buffoon characters, we see in novels and upon the stage, your Sancho Panzas, Tony Lumpkins, &c. passes current for extreme cleverness, among the bulk of our rural statesmen. These are of the class of Mr Jefferson's chosen people, however; and though, when in their place, their petty rogueries are very harmless and diverting; yet, when agog for office, with the extensive means of mischief they possess, in their sovereign capa-

city, they may, nevertheless, be fully competent to the ruin of a nation. The name of Washington, as already observed, was always usurped by this species of good republicans; and so deplorable was the stupidity of a certain portion of the most enlightened people upon earth, that the following fabrication was not too monstrous for their intellectual gullets. John Adams, it was stated, was about to unite his house to that of his majesty of Britain, either by marrying one of his sons to one of the king's daughters, or one of his daughters to one of the king's sons, (I forget which,) but the consequence was, that the bridegroom was to be King of America :—That General Washington had heard of this, as well as of the other anti-republican conduct of the President, at which he was, of course, most grievously displeased :—That, therefore, he went to talk to Mr Adams upon the subject, and by way of being more persuasive by appearing gay, good humoured, and friendly, he dressed himself in a suit of white, and discoursed with him very mildly; but neither his dress nor his arguments were of any avail. Then he waited upon him a second time, and, in order to render his remonstrance more solemn and impressive, he put on a suit of black, and set before Mr Adams the heinousness of his proceedings; but to as little purpose as before. He at length paid him a third and last visit, in which he appeared in full regimentals, when finding the President still deaf to good counsel, he drew his sword, declaring, he would never sheath it, until Mr Adams had relinquished his wicked designs, and so left him a sworn enemy. During the circulation of this ingenious romance, not ill adapted to the capacities it was designed for, and having all the marks of veracity derivable from circumstantial minuteness; the letter

from General Washington, announcing his acceptance of the command of the provisional army, and his approbation of the measures pursuing, was also circulating in the federal prints. But this signified nothing, as they never reached the persons to be deluded by the story; and even if they had reached them, the latter would immediately have been knocked down as a federal lie. Such, be it again observed, is *the bar of public reason.*

The consequence of these united efforts of patriotism and invention was another insurrection. The sedition which began in the county of Northampton ran in a vein through the counties of Berks and Dauphin, spreading the infection by means of liberty poles, successively rising in grand colonnade from the banks of the Delaware to those of Susquehanna. Mr Adams had now to set to work to quell this second effervescence of liberty; and it proved a matter of no great difficulty, when force was applied. Poor Fries, like the whisky insurgents, was, for a time, left in the lurch; but, finally, sent "a colonelling," by good Governor M'Kean. The object of the tumult, however, was, perhaps, fully obtained; and had Fries been hanged, it would have been deemed but a very small sacrifice. It enlisted the feelings and resentments of a populous district on the side of democracy; and, by the spirit of turbulence and discontent it scattered abroad in the state, it helped to prepare the way for the coming in of Mr M'Kean, as its governor; and thence, by the "momentum of Pennsylvania politics," (noticed by Mr Dallas,) to pave the way for the accession of Mr Jefferson to the presidency. It gave occasion, too, for a useful nickname on the administration of Mr Adams, which, with a sardonic grin, not unworthy the taunting malignity of demons, was, by the recent shout-

ers for the mountain party of Robespierre, denominated, A reign of terror,—now become a truly odious thing.

Such a fund of republicanism as was, by these means, infused into Pennsylvania, could not fail to operate favourably for the *republican candidate*, Chief-Justice M'Kean; and he was, consequently, elected governor, in preference to Mr Ross; and the same causes, aided by Callender's Prospect before us, that *chef d'œuvre* of civic piety, operating in the same direction throughout the union, not long after, invested Mr Jefferson with the presidency. *Summoque ululârunt vertice nymphæ.* * Ye who have genius for the epic employ your talents here! one entire action of twelve years successfully terminated, at last, not by ruffians stained with blood, but by meek and gentle operators in the "swindling arena."

Such a result was to have been looked for. The morbid state of the public mind was, I repeat it, to have been deduced from the very addresses to the President, which have been considered as indicative of a manly patriotic vigour. They will, on the contrary, (at least it was the impression made upon me at the time of their appearance,) be too generally found to breathe a spirit of bigotry; not a generous love of country, not an adequate horror of vice, not a proper understanding of the subject, but rather a whining lamentation that the conduct of the Directory, so little fraternal, had a tendency to impede and interrupt the glorious career of illuminatism and

* *Nymphæ*, by some of Virgil's commentators, are here understood to mean Furies, and may easily be extended to the *Furies of Jacobinism*; which, no doubt, howled in exultation upon this occasion.

kingly demolition. This was evidently perceived and felt by Mr Adams; and was, doubtless, his inducement for complimenting the Harrisburgh address, whose merit, if it had any, was, that it cut deeper and approached nearer to the source of the evil than the general tenor of the addresses had done. Let us love our country, let us cherish our institutions, and check their tendency to corruption and abuse; but let us no more think of cutting the throats of those who may differ from us in their civil polity, than of those who differ from us in their religious creed. Should we not look with something more than pity on the fanatic, who should languish to kill the Pope, to exterminate the Cardinals, and to annihilate the Holy See? What, then, but an equally silly spirit of fanaticism can induce us to sigh for the regeneration of Europe, in the extinction of her kings and privileged orders! Does any one now suppose that it would meliorate the condition of mankind? But the symptoms of this most loathsome mental distemper were never more manifest than shortly before the downfal of federalism, when the gallant Truxtun, for an achievement that redounded to his country's glory, and for which he should have received her unqualified warmest applause, was assailed with brutal rage, and called a ruffian and a murderer. Could any thing more clearly demonstrate, that love of country was swallowed up in a rage for political theory?

By this memorable victory of Pennsylvania democracy, for the behoof of Virginia aristocracy, occasion is afforded for much serious reflection on the sad effects of party fury; and giving the rein to those vindictive passions which arise from selfishness opposed. No man, perhaps, ever more fatally and intemperately rioted in their indulgence than Mr M'Kean. But the affair is old, and I am

little disposed to renew it. As keenly sensible to injury as any one, I have felt with poignancy, and given vent to my indignation; but it is neither for my reputation nor my repose to cherish feelings which deform the outward man, and prey upon the breast which harbours them. I shall be cold, therefore, upon a subject wherein warmth and even acrimony might be justified.

From the account I have given of my political opinions, it can scarcely be necessary to say, that my vote was on the federal side, and given for Mr Ross; and that I was, of course, involved in the proscription that followed the defeat of my party. In a word, I was one of those who were loaded with reproach and detruded from office, as men unworthy to partake of the honours, or even to eat the bread, of their country. The extent of my offending the reader is acquainted with. It was the crime of my party in being prematurely right; in daring to be wiser than the great body of the people. Why, then, did I not play the dotard with my country? Why did I not sigh for fraternity with France, unconscious of the peril that awaited it?

> I swear 'tis better to be much abus'd,
> Than but to know't a little.

If I unfortunately thought differently from Mr M'Kean on the highly interesting subject of Gallic republicanism, and, in so doing, *apostatized* from my former Whiggism, I can only say I could not help it. That I did not forego my opinion when I found it repugnant to his, is not a matter of so easy extrication. I was contumacious, I know I was. But my conscience is satisfied; and that I never shouted in the sanguinary triumphs of the Jacobins will, though it has made me poorer, bring consolation

along with it, in the close of a life, which, in all other respects, I could wish had been equally blameless. An early enthusiast in a most unfashionable cause,

> Some sin to me unknown
> Dipp'd me in ink, my parents or my own;

even before my sentiments could be relished by the generality of the party to which I belonged; and while, from their novelty, they were so shocking to others, as to draw into question the sanity of my intellects. I had even ventured to shed a tear for the fate of Louis and his family; I had presumed to doubt the wisdom of Brissot, and to arraign the humanity of Robespierre, long before the guillotine had granted toleration for these opinions.

But, independent of so much heterodoxy, my simple vote had been sufficient for the punishment that ensued; since the possessions of the vanquished were, in the true spirit of the feudal system, to be parcelled out among the champions of the victorious leader. This, without doubt, was a mutual preliminary to a partnership in the war; and as among the holders of office, in the apologetic *naiveté* of Mr Jefferson, "few died and none resigned," what was left but to cashier them? I forbear to reiterate here the stale remark that the free unbiassed suffrage of the citizens is the basis of the republican form of government. Maxims have their use, but must be wholly disregarded in extreme cases; as, in England, the Habeas Corpus Act. Republicanism herself was here in danger. Was not a band of conspirators, with Washington at their head, in the very act of establishing a monarchy under the insidious mask of federalism? *

---

* This apostacy to monarchy was inferred from President Wash-

A man, desirous to know the world, ought to place himself in every situation to which the vicissitudes of life may expose him. Above all, he should be acquainted with adversity, and that particular kind of it which results from a sudden reverse of fortune. But, to see the heart of man in that most unfavourable point of view, in which the milk of human kindness is turned to gall and bitterness, he should behold it when elate with a "republican triumph." It has twice been my lot to smart under the hand of oppression. I have been exposed to the fury both of royal and republican vengeance; and, unless I may be misled by the greater recency of the latter, I am compelled to say, that the first, though bad, was most mitigated by instances of generosity. If it produced the enormities the reader has been made acquainted with, the other was ruthless enough to rejoice at the sight of helpless families, at once reduced to indigence, stripped of their subsistence, driven from their homes, and sent to seek their bread by toiling in a wilderness. This is no exaggerated picture; I saw the reality, and felt it too, in the case of a near connexion. And for what crime was it the punishment? For embracing the policy of Washington; for being true to the dictates of honesty, to the interests of their country, to the interests of humanity; for having larger hearts, and greater minds, and nobler souls, than those who, by the inscru-

---

ington's not joining the French against England; but now, when Spain is contending for her rights and liberties, the Jeffersonians can make common cause with her perfidious oppressor without danger of any such deduction or imputation. Their incorruptible republicanism can even take the fraternal hug with an emperor without the smallest suspicion of contamination.

table will of Heaven, were permitted to be their chastisers.

The death of the great father of his country, which happened between the election and the inauguration of the governor, afforded another instance of democratic versatility. He was publicly and pathetically lamented and extolled by the leaders of the party: By Mr M'Kean while in the very act of chastising his followers; and by Mr Jefferson while contemplating a similar conduct. The latter, it is said, made a visit to his tomb, which he plenteously bedewed with tears, and groaned aloud with every gesture of the deepest woe. Achilles himself was not more inconsolable for the loss of his Patroclus: And even, in the sacrifice of twelve young Trojans to his manes, he was far outdone by this illustrious modern mourner, with the remarkable difference, however, that, whereas the one made victims of the enemies, the other selected for immolation the friends of the lamented dead.

Utcumque ferent ea facta minores;
Vincet amor patriæ, laudumque immensa cupido.

In the election of Mr Jefferson the long and persevering efforts of democracy had obtained their *ultimatum*; the beginning of that millenium that had been so anxiously sighed for. With this propitious era, therefore, I close my narrative of political events and party machinations. I had, indeed, aimed at nothing more than a sketch of public affairs, in so far as my fortune was more peculiarly implicated in them. As to the conduct of Mr Jefferson, in the management of his high trust, it would appear to have been his primary object to discredit the republican form of government, by illustrating the

abuses of which it is susceptible, and its proneness to become the prey of unprincipled intriguers. I should suppose him to be a monarchist of the true imperial cut; and that his administration was peculiarly calculated to surfeit us with liberty; to expose the nakedness of our systems, and the extreme fragility of those ties he once denominated Lilliputian. Upon this hypothesis, all is plain and consistent, on every other inexplicable, unless we can admit the possibility of a philosopher being a fool, or of a patriot being a man solely bent on filling his pocket. Methinks I see the mighty personage, like a sated Condor on the Andes, sublimely perched on Monticello, triumphantly deriding the clumsy labours of New England morality, and self-complacently counting the gains of his superior illumination. But whether the speculum, through which I view him, may magnify or diminish him, show him justly or distort him, it is too manifest a truth that, the lesson given by France we are inculcating with all our might, and erecting America also into a beacon, instead of a guide. To the sad example of former republics we are eagerly adding our own, and certifying, in colossal characters, to the world, the melancholy result of "this last and fairest experiment" in favour of free government.

As to myself, I have obtained the reward which perhaps every man must look for, "who, upon the strength of innocence alone, shall dare openly to speak the truth, without first propping himself by cabals, without forming parties for his protection." I have not only been punished by my political enemies, but have seen the justice of the measure solemnly ratified by the suffrages of those whom I supposed to be my friends. For the sake of a paper constitution, whose threatened destruction has be-

come the trick of the demagogue, seeking power as its preservation becomes his device, so soon as he is invested with it, a host of officers, that had been prostrated by the pioneer of Mr Jefferson, were coolly and remorselessly consigned to their fate by the federalists. The substance of justice was exchanged for its shadow, and the principle established, that virtue is a certain bar to the attainment of power, an encumbrance which the candidate cannot too soon shake off; and that corruption and wrong mark the route to be pursued. This, be it known, is the unanimous decree in Pennsylvania, the law of the land, *nemine contradicente*. A similar, but much less galling and extensively mischievous, instance of ratified oppression, gave birth to the Social Contract of Rousseau. He had been borne down unjustly, as he supposed, by the French Ambassador to Venice, to whom he had been secretary, and with whom he had a dispute; and his oppressor, countenanced and supported by the community, first gave him, as he informs us, the idea of a comparative analysis of the government and society to whose justice he had appealed in vain. "Every body agreed," says he, "that I was insulted, injured, and unfortunate; that the ambassador was mad, cruel, and iniquitous, and that the whole of the affair dishonoured him for ever. But what of this? He was the ambassador, and I was nothing more than the secretary. The justice and inutility of my complaints left in my mind seeds of indignation against our foolish civil institutions, by which the welfare of the public and real justice are always sacrificed to I know not what appearance of order; and which does nothing more than add the sanction of public authority to the oppression of the weak and iniquity of the powerful." It is scarcely necessary

to mention that these remarks refer to the ancient monarchy of France. Could the author of the Social Contract have supposed that they could ever be equally applicable to institutions expressly founded on the principles of liberty and justice, and which even aim at restoring the natural equality of mankind? But Rousseau was not aware, that the germ of the evil he complained of was not in any particular form of government, but in the world; ever slavishly inclined to offer incense to power, with very little regard to the general justice of its exercise.

If the end of punishment be to reform, mine has been wholly lost upon me; though my example has no doubt been useful to others. I was too high toned and indiscreet even in the opinion of many federalists; for many there were who saw no wisdom in martyrdom. I am still, however, to speak the truth, a most incorrigible sinner, though somewhat cooled of my ardour; and so little amended by the chastisement I have received, as to behold, if possible, with increased contempt and execration, the procedures of those very great and good men, under whose auspices it has been administered. The possession of power has exhibited them in even blacker colours, than did the sink in which they "lay straining their low thought," to obtain it: and although unable to vie with our dear departed sister republic in deeds of martial emprise, we certainly "gall her kibes," in those of fraudulent achievement. In truth, we must by this time be nearly mature. Hypocrisy, we are told, is the consummation of vice; and the libertine hero of Moliere's Festin de Pierre is not thought ripe for destruction until he receives this last polish of villany.

If there be any thing wrong in this language, it does not

arise from its being applied to a point of which there is any doubt; but merely from its solemnity approximating it to bombast, by being employed on a matter, become trivial from extreme familiarity. However shocked at first, we now only laugh at the monstrosities of the era. After what we have seen in France, and are now witnessing at home, Caligula's making his horse consul is a thing of very easy belief; nor is any historical phenomenon more incredible than the mutual passion subsisting between enthusiastic republicanism on the one hand, and the most desolating and dismaying system of despotism, which the world has yet beheld, on the other.

Though this picture may pass with some for an hideous caricature, enough of truth, I trust, will be found in it, to convince them that we are no longer in that full tide of successful experiment, that wafted Mr Jefferson into office; that, on the contrary, we felt the influence of "retiring ebb," and were, therefore, needlessly vigilant in guarding against the inroads of British corruption. Neither have we shown that we are so entirely well adapted to our institutions, as to render it a necessary ingredient in the education of our youth, to prepossess them with a bigoted aversion to every other mode of government, and thereby to render them the ready patrons of insurrection and anarchy in every quarter of the globe. The Commentaries of Blackstone, we are told by a great law character and writer, should be studied with caution, since he is heterodox in some of his opinions, and does not trace power to its genuine source; that is, "through its small and pure streams up to the free and independent man." Mr Burke, too, comes under the lash of the American statesman, who, with a sneer, that had much better been spared, insinuates his

want of integrity, and talks of his "new creed." But what did Mr Wilson know of his old one? Was it ever confided to him? Did Mr Burke ever tell him that he was not a monarchist, but a republican? For he certainly never told the world so. Mr Wilson was an able man, and his eloquence, as a speaker, singularly forcible and commanding; but when he undertakes to raise trophies to himself from the dispraise of such men as Blackstone and Burke, he engages in a task which may justly be termed a bold one. As to the fine allegory, under which the fountain of political power is represented to have been at length discovered, like the source of the Nile, what does it amount to? It may be happily conceived, but it is little satisfactory. "Men's rights," says Mr Burke, "are their advantages." This is coming to the point; and it is not a discovery of the source of power that decides the question of human happiness, but how its streams can be best distributed for the attainment of that end. After finding power to originate in the free and independent man, we have yet to inquire, whether this free and independent man will voluntarily submit to the restraints which the good of the community requires of him. If he will, Mr Wilson is both practically and theoretically right; and the question, as to forms of government, is at rest. But his manner seems rather too dogmatical, considering that he is the advocate of a system, which, however plausible in theory, has experience against it: and when he compliments us Pennsylvanians for our love "of liberty and *law*," he must certainly have adopted the maxim of *laudando admonere*, since, neither in the attack of his own house, nor in our two more recent insurrections, is this distinguished love of law to be recognised. There

appears to me, therefore, more propriety and wisdom in speaking of our institutions, as experiments, whose failure may be deemed the general misfortune of mankind, as is done by Mr Hamilton, in his Federalist, than in treating those with disrespect and asperity, who have laboured to support other principles of government—principles, too, which seem absolutely essential to order, in the nation of which they were subjects. That we possess advantages, which are not to be found in the Old World, I have no difficulty in believing; but in an estimate of our comparative superiority, it is but fair to abstract from our polity the benefits derived from our state of society and population. Instead, then, of engaging in scholastic disputations and wars of extermination about political modes of faith, let us be content with performing our duties to the system we have established for ourselves: and in the writings of this very Mr Burke, heretic and apostate though he be, a most excellent lesson may be found for our purpose. It is in his Appeal to the Old Whigs, page 82 of the New York edition. The passage struck me, as containing reasoning at once new, moral, and refined; but I have since found it to be merely a dilatation of the quatrain of Gui du Fur de Pibrac, in words which are evidently the text of Mr Burke's most beautiful commentary.

Aime l'etat, tel que tu le vois etre:
S'il royal aime la royaute;
S'il ne l'est point, s'il est communaute,
Aime le aussi, quand Dieu t'y a fait naitre. *

* It may thus be translated: Love the state to which you belong, such as you find it to be: if of the royal kind, love and be loyal to it: if, on the contrary, it be a commonwealth, equally love

Still if the sentiment be thought too indulgent to legitimate monarchy, (and nothing royal is to be endured, it seems, unless proceeding from fraud, usurpation, and violence,) I say with Mr Wilson, that democracy is the best of all possible governments—*if the people are not wanting to themselves.* But, that we have been latterly a good deal wanting to ourselves, I must be permitted to believe; and also to think with Mr Hillhouse, that, in the present corrupted state of our morals, what has been absurdly termed a strong executive, and thought our best security, has become our greatest bane—that the splendour of chief magistracy we must not look to have; but, in its stead, an unostentatious, ephemeral head, begotten by chance, and dying while yet in infancy—literally coming up and cut down like a flower. The attributes of royalty neither become us, nor are good for us. They sink our great men into very little ones, or only "aggrandize them into baseness." To give any chance, therefore, for the operations of patriotism, we must smother that obtrusive thing called *self*; and by taking away, or rendering power uncertain and fugitive, we must, with pious humility, endeavour to deliver ourselves from temptation.

I am aware of the offence which may be given by these observations: but I will not now begin to cajole, when I have foregone beyond redemption, what might once have been gained by it. Having spoken truth so long, I will persevere to the end; nor, though fully admitting that, by a virtuous use of the government we possess, we may become the most happy people upon earth,

---

and be faithful to it, since heaven has made it the place of your nativity.

am I at all disposed to conceal, that, by the nefarious policy in fashion, we are in a fair way of rendering ourselves the most miserable. One of its fundamental maxims, and, to all appearance, its most favourite one, is, that Britain must be destroyed;—a power which is evidently the world's last hope against the desolating scene of universal slavery:*—a country, too, which, in the language of a native American, who tells us he had entertained the common prejudices against her, presents "the most beautiful and perfect model of public and private prosperity, the most magnificent, and, at the same time, most solid fabric of social happiness and national grandeur." And yet all this is to be demolished, because, some thirty years ago, we were engaged with her in a contest, which, so far as independence is implicated, appears now to have been a truly "unprofitable one." But God forbid that the long-lived malice of Mr Jefferson should be gratified! And the deprecation is equally extended to his successor, should he unhappily harbour the same pitiable rancour. If these gentlemen, during the war, have had their nerves too rudely shocked by the invader, to be able to recover their propriety, or to adhere to the assurance given in the declaration of independence, of considering the English as "friends in peace, and only enemies in war," they ought to reflect, that it is not strictly patriotic, to risk the ruin of their country, to obtain revenge. Or if they are only unluckily committed, through

* If there is any thing degrading in this sentiment, we may thank ourselves for affording ground for it. For it is absurd to talk of fighting, where empty treasuries are preferred to full ones, where cowardice has been inculcated both by maxims and devices, and where the people have been taught to believe that taxation is oppression.

a prodigality of stipulation, for the sake of dear Louisiana—God send them a good deliverance, or, at least, their country an happy riddance, both of the vendor and vendees.

That England has long been, and still is, fighting the battle of the civilized world, I hold to be an incontrovertible truth. The observation I know to be trite, but I am not a servile follower in the use of it. So long ago as the year 1797, I was the author of the following sentiment in Mr Fenno's Gazette: "As to Great Britain, with all her errors and vices, and little, perhaps, as America may owe her, considering the situation in which she has been fortuitously placed by the dreadful convulsions of Europe, so far from wishing her downfall, I consider her preservation as of real importance to mankind; and have long looked upon her as the barrier betwixt the world and anarchy." *—The sentiment was then in me an original conception; I had never heard it before, if ever it had been uttered. It has unceasingly been among my strongest convictions, with the modification, that she is now our protection from despotism; and it is therefore natural that I should be gratified by the very able and valuable pamphlet which Mr Walsh has presented to his country. It is to be wished it may be read as well as the other writings he is submitting to us, with candour and a proper feeling for the general interest, not merely of this nation but of mankind. In contemplating the

* This passage is in an article in the Gazette of the United States, of November 10th, 1797, signed A Country Subscriber, and is the conclusion of a slight sparring with Mr Cobbett, which gentleman, by the bye, has given a notable instance of his candour in his *Selections from Porcupine's Gazette*, publishing therein my attack, and his answer to it, but wholly suppressing this rejoinder.

enormities of the time, it is remarkable that we can only find matter for illustration in the poets who flourished amid the confusions which prevailed in the decline of the Roman empire. Thus Mr Walsh has frequent recourse to Claudian, whose poem in Rufinum very forcibly depicts the dark atrocities of a ferocious and despotic usurpation, which, though acted on an infinitely smaller theatre than that of the present day, had those dismaying appearances which so overpower and confound the mind, as to plerplex it even with doubts of an overruling Providence. *

I have dipped deeper into politics than I intended, or conceived would be necessary at my outset: but without an obvious departure from the declared design of my work, and a dereliction of the sacred duty which every annalist owes to the world, the subject, however trite and unpleasant, could not be avoided; and much as I have dwelt upon it, it yet forms but a very imperfect sketch of our public transactions. It has relieved me, however, from a detail of my own personal concerns, which being made up of the common occurrences of still life, chequered as usual with good and with evil, it would be highly arrogant in me to suppose could be in any degree worthy of the public attention. I shall only advert to them, therefore, for the single purpose of mentioning, that my mother, who has acted no inconsiderable part in my narrative, finished, under my roof, a long and well spent life, protracted to her seventy-eighth year, on the

* Thus expressed in the opening of the poem:

Saepe mihi dubiam traxit sententia mentem,
Curarent Superi terras, an nullus inesset,
Rector, et incerto fluerent mortalia casu.

23d of January 1807. Her excellent constitution sunk under the *republican* havoc on her family: her first symptom of decay followed close upon it; and she fell a martyr, in all probability, to the ever memorable triumph of what has been impiously called the triumph of good principles. Perhaps, however, she had lived long enough.

Of the part I have acted in this turbulent scene the reader is truly informed. Whether it was wise or unwise, I will take upon me to say, it was conscientious and disinterested. Yet it certainly makes but a very sorry figure at an era so distinguished for rapid acquisitions of fortune and dignity. To have commanded a company in the continental army at the age of three and twenty, and not to have advanced an inch in the glorious career of personal aggrandizement, makes good, I think, my promise of negative instruction; and I must be as very a wretch in the eyes of the aspiring, as was the unambitious Richard Cromwell in those of the Prince of Conti.—Why even the imperial Napoleon himself had scarcely a fairer prospect, when making his *debut* as an artillerist before the walls of Toulon. Then,

"What a rogue and peasant slave am I!"

Nevertheless, with respect to the glory acquired by what may be termed *civic accomplishments*, I have some ragged pride in making it known, that my insignificance is not so much owing to an absolute ignorance of the game, as to a want of the nerve that is necessary for playing it to advantage. Though unambitious of *philosophic* fame, I have no desire to pass for a simpleton; and therefore wish it to be understood, that I am not to learn, that this revolution business and republicanism, with whatever purity begun, has nearly issued in a scramble, in

which all morality and even decency being thrown aside, he is the cleverest fellow, that, by a trick or violence, can emerge the fullest handed. I regret that I am obliged to say so. I would much rather be the encomiast than the satirist of my country, which I have no doubt contains so ample a portion of manly sentiment, as, under better auspices, to entitle it to a lofty strain of panegyric.

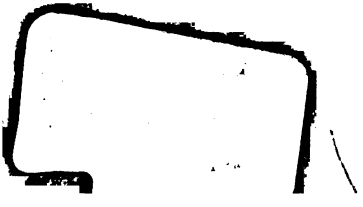
But it will be said I am a party man; and as all party men are prejudiced, these censures must go for nothing. I am indeed a party man, as I conceive there is a right and wrong in politics as in other things: I freely admit it, too, that I am prejudiced to a great degree; but all my prejudices, I trust, are in favour of honesty and fair dealing, and where these appear, no one has more toleration for error. This is an indulgence I may have need of myself; but I reflect with satisfaction, that among my faults, I have no act of deceit, injustice, or oppression, (for I have sometimes had a little power,) to reproach myself with; and this I say without fear of contradiction. I have some reliance, too, that those who know me, even of the opposite political party, will give me credit for general good intention, and openness of character; and this granted, I ask no quarter for my sentiments. If they are erroneous and unfounded, let them be scouted and exposed; I shall be among the first to condemn them, if persuaded of their falsity.

And I here recognize, with suitable feelings, the liberal and unsought patronage to this undertaking, from many of my neighbours and townsmen, with whose political conduct and opinions mine have generally been in collision. If I have been less accommodating to their sentiments than I could have wished, they will read my

apology in the tenor of my performance, which does not merely purport to speak with plainness, but manifests, I presume that it has done so in reality, without respect to parties or to persons. I have occasionally, I am sensible, expressed myself with some asperity; with more, perhaps, than may be thought congenial to the nature of my work; but this must be attributed to my awful impression of the dangers which surround us, and a solemn apprehension, that all the advantages of our situation are about to be sacrificed to a profligate rage for place and party supremacy.

Thus, uncalled for, have I ventured upon a pretty full account, both of my Life and my Opinions. Of the value of either, it is not for me to judge; but as it was my lot to enter upon manhood just at the commencement of the Revolution, and to be a witness of its progress, its consummation, and its consequences, it appeared to me, that the period, if justly delineated, could not be altogether destitute of instruction. I have endeavoured to depict it truly; and I trust I have done so, in regard, at least, to the phases presented to my vision. The facts I have related I have either witnessed myself, or received on such authority as leaves with me little doubt of their correctness; and my inferences, though sometimes harsh, are always the result of the most deliberate and candid reflection: Whatever, therefore, may be the errors of my book, they are not those of wilful misrepresentation.

THE END.

Printed by George Ramsay & Company,
Edinburgh, 1821.

JAN 2 0 1980